

NPS ARCHIVE
1967
INGRAM, W.

William A. Ingram

MILITARY INFLUENCE ON
NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY.

LIBRARY
NAVAL POSTGRADUATE SCHOOL
MONTSEY, CALIF. 93940

SECRET
TOP SECRET
301404A 2911

MILITARY INFLUENCE ON NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

by

William A. Ingram

Submitted to the
Faculty of the School of International Service
of The American University
in Partial Fulfillment of
the Requirements for the Degree
of
MASTER OF ARTS

LIBRARY
NAVAL POSTGRADUATE SCHOOL,
MONTEREY, CALIF. 93940

AN ABSTRACT

of

MILITARY INFLUENCE ON NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

by

William A. Ingram

Submitted to the

Faculty of the School of International Service

of The American University

in Partial Fulfillment of

the Requirements for the Degree

of

MASTER OF ARTS

June, 1967

The American University
Washington, D. C.

LIBRARY
NAVAL POSTGRADUATE SCHOOL
MONTEREY, CALIF. 93940

AN ABSTRACT

OF

MILITARY INFLUENCE ON NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

BY

William A. Ingram

Submitted to the

Faculty of the School of International Studies

of The American University

in partial fulfillment of

the requirements for the degree

of

MASTER OF ARTS

June, 1967

The American University
Washington, D. C.

ABSTRACT

The importance of the military influence on national security policy is easily recognized but not always understood. Often the significance of the military influence is distorted because it is not observed in the proper overall perspective of national security policy formulation and implementation. This thesis is an attempt to integrate the military element into the policy process by observing the overall influence relationship. In order to provide the proper perspective, the military influence is observed in its societal and institutional environment as well as noting means for influence effectuation. In addition to describing and analyzing the military influence, an effort is made to find a proper military role within the national security policy process.

ABSTRACT

The importance of the military influence on national security policy is easily recognized but not always understood. Often the significance of the military influence is distorted because it is not observed in the proper overall perspective of national security policy formulation and implementation. This thesis is an attempt to integrate the military element into the policy process by observing the overall relationship. In order to provide the proper perspective, the military influence is observed in its societal and institutional environment as well as noting means for influence interaction. In addition to describing and analyzing the military influence, an effort is made to find a proper military role within the national security policy process.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. INTRODUCTION	1
II. THE EXPANSION OF THE MILITARY ROLE IN NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY	6
Traditional Civilian-Military Relationship . .	8
Civilian-Military Distrust	9
Military Professionalism and Social Isolation	13
Civilian Supremacy Concept	22
Postwar Perspectives and New Military Horizons	28
American World Position	29
Technological Advancements	32
Policy Vacuum	33
Interdependence of National Security and Military Policy	37
Wide Policy Implications	37
Security Planning against Time	42
National Interest versus Corporate Interest	44
III. ORGANIZING FOR NATIONAL SECURITY	47
The Unification Conflict	49
The Truman Administration	50
The Eisenhower Administration	65

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. INTRODUCTION	1
II. THE EXPANSION OF THE MILITARY ROLE IN NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY	6
EXPERIMENTAL CIVILIAN-MILITARY RELATIONSHIPS	8
CIVILIAN-MILITARY RELATIONSHIPS	8
MILITARY TECHNOLOGICAL AND SOCIAL	
LEGISLATION	11
CIVILIAN SUPREMACY CONCEPT	12
FOREIGN TECHNOLOGICAL AND NEW MILITARY	
HORIZONS	16
AMERICAN WORLD POSITION	19
TECHNOLOGICAL ADVANCEMENTS	21
POLICY VARIATION	21
INTERDEPENDENCE OF NATIONAL SECURITY AND	
MILITARY POLICY	27
WIDE POLICY IMPLICATIONS	27
SECURITY PLANNING AGAINST TIME	27
NATIONAL INTEREST VERSUS CONCEPTS	
INTEREST	44
III. ORGANIZING FOR NATIONAL SECURITY	47
THE UNIFICATION CONCEPT	48
THE TOWNSHIP CONCEPT	50
THE ECONOMIC CONCEPT	50

CHAPTER

PAGE

The Kennedy-Johnson Administration	69
The Unification Act	73
Unity not Unitarian	76
Centralized Control	78
Civilian Supremacy Reinforced	80
Department of Defense	81
Organizational Aspects	82
Administrative Responsibilities	85
Coordination of Policy Planning	87
The Joint Chiefs of Staff	92
Functions of JCS	92
Organizational Aspects	93
Criticisms of the Joint Chiefs	
Organization	96

IV. MILITARY INVOLVEMENT IN NATIONAL SECURITY

POLICY	99
Military Influence in Policy Planning	101
Professional Expertise in Military	
Strategy	103
Civilian-Military Policy Coordination	113
Military as Policy Implementers	117
Guardians of Security	117
Military Aid and Missions	120
Policy Representatives	122

90	The Kennedy-Johnson Administration	
93	The Vietnam War	
96	Only one Vietnam	
98	Continued Control	
99	Civilian Authority Reinforced	
100	Department of Defense	
101	Organizational Aspects	
102	Administrative Responsibilities	
103	Coordination of Policy Planning	
104	The Joint Chiefs of Staff	
105	Functions of JCS	
106	Organizational Aspects	
107	Chiefs of the Joint Chiefs	
108	Organization	
109	IV. MILITARY INVOLVEMENT IN NATIONAL IDENTITY	
110	Policy	
111	Military Involvement in Policy Planning	
112	Organizational Aspects in Military	
113	Security	
114	Civilian-Military Policy Coordination	
115	Military as Policy Implementers	
116	Conditions of Security	
117	Military Aid and Mission	
118	Policy Implementation	

CHAPTER	PAGE
The Subtle Influence	124
Public Opinion	125
Economic Impact	128
Social Impact	133
V. MEANS OF INFLUENCE AND AN APPROPRIATE	
MILITARY ROLE	138
Effectuating Military Influence	138
Legitimate Means of Influence	139
Quasi-Legitimate Means of Influence	145
Illegitimate Means of Influence	150
An Appropriate Military Role	158
Problems of a Limiting Parameter	161
Necessary Factors for Limiting Influence	169
VI. CONCLUSIONS	174
BIBLIOGRAPHY	178

CHAPTER	
CHAPTER I	154
CHAPTER II	155
CHAPTER III	156
CHAPTER IV	157
CHAPTER V	158
CHAPTER VI	159
CHAPTER VII	160
CHAPTER VIII	161
CHAPTER IX	162
CHAPTER X	163
CHAPTER XI	164
CHAPTER XII	165
CHAPTER XIII	166
CHAPTER XIV	167
CHAPTER XV	168
CHAPTER XVI	169
CHAPTER XVII	170
CHAPTER XVIII	171
CHAPTER XIX	172
CHAPTER XX	173
CHAPTER XXI	174
CHAPTER XXII	175
CHAPTER XXIII	176
CHAPTER XXIV	177
CHAPTER XXV	178
CHAPTER XXVI	179
CHAPTER XXVII	180
CHAPTER XXVIII	181
CHAPTER XXIX	182
CHAPTER XXX	183
CHAPTER XXXI	184
CHAPTER XXXII	185
CHAPTER XXXIII	186
CHAPTER XXXIV	187
CHAPTER XXXV	188
CHAPTER XXXVI	189
CHAPTER XXXVII	190
CHAPTER XXXVIII	191
CHAPTER XXXIX	192
CHAPTER XL	193
CHAPTER XLI	194
CHAPTER XLII	195
CHAPTER XLIII	196
CHAPTER XLIV	197
CHAPTER XLV	198
CHAPTER XLVI	199
CHAPTER XLVII	200
CHAPTER XLVIII	201
CHAPTER XLIX	202
CHAPTER L	203
CHAPTER LI	204
CHAPTER LII	205
CHAPTER LIII	206
CHAPTER LIV	207
CHAPTER LV	208
CHAPTER LVI	209
CHAPTER LVII	210
CHAPTER LVIII	211
CHAPTER LIX	212
CHAPTER LX	213
CHAPTER LXI	214
CHAPTER LXII	215
CHAPTER LXIII	216
CHAPTER LXIV	217
CHAPTER LXV	218
CHAPTER LXVI	219
CHAPTER LXVII	220
CHAPTER LXVIII	221
CHAPTER LXIX	222
CHAPTER LXX	223
CHAPTER LXXI	224
CHAPTER LXXII	225
CHAPTER LXXIII	226
CHAPTER LXXIV	227
CHAPTER LXXV	228
CHAPTER LXXVI	229
CHAPTER LXXVII	230
CHAPTER LXXVIII	231
CHAPTER LXXIX	232
CHAPTER LXXX	233
CHAPTER LXXXI	234
CHAPTER LXXXII	235
CHAPTER LXXXIII	236
CHAPTER LXXXIV	237
CHAPTER LXXXV	238
CHAPTER LXXXVI	239
CHAPTER LXXXVII	240
CHAPTER LXXXVIII	241
CHAPTER LXXXIX	242
CHAPTER LXXXX	243
CHAPTER LXXXXI	244
CHAPTER LXXXXII	245
CHAPTER LXXXXIII	246
CHAPTER LXXXXIV	247
CHAPTER LXXXXV	248
CHAPTER LXXXXVI	249
CHAPTER LXXXXVII	250
CHAPTER LXXXXVIII	251
CHAPTER LXXXXIX	252
CHAPTER LXXXXX	253
CHAPTER LXXXXXI	254
CHAPTER LXXXXXII	255
CHAPTER LXXXXXIII	256
CHAPTER LXXXXXIV	257
CHAPTER LXXXXXV	258
CHAPTER LXXXXXVI	259
CHAPTER LXXXXXVII	260
CHAPTER LXXXXXVIII	261
CHAPTER LXXXXXIX	262
CHAPTER LXXXXXX	263
CHAPTER LXXXXXXI	264
CHAPTER LXXXXXXII	265
CHAPTER LXXXXXXIII	266
CHAPTER LXXXXXXIV	267
CHAPTER LXXXXXXV	268
CHAPTER LXXXXXXVI	269
CHAPTER LXXXXXXVII	270
CHAPTER LXXXXXXVIII	271
CHAPTER LXXXXXXIX	272
CHAPTER LXXXXXXX	273
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	274
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	275
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	276
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	277
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	278
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	279
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	280
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	281
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	282
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	283
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	284
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	285
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	286
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	287
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	288
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	289
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	290
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	291
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	292
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	293
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	294
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	295
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	296
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	297
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	298
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	299
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	300
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	301
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	302
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	303
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	304
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	305
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	306
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	307
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	308
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	309
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	310
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	311
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	312
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	313
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	314
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	315
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	316
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	317
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	318
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	319
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	320
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	321
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	322
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	323
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	324
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	325
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	326
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	327
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	328
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	329
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	330
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	331
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	332
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	333
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	334
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	335
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	336
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	337
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	338
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	339
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	340
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	341
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	342
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	343
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	344
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	345
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	346
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	347
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	348
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	349
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	350
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	351
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	352
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	353
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	354
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	355
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	356
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	357
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	358
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	359
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	360
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	361
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	362
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	363
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	364
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	365
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	366
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	367
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	368
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	369
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	370
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	371
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	372
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	373
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	374
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	375
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	376
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	377
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	378
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	379
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	380
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	381
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	382
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	383
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	384
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	385
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	386
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	387
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	388
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	389
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	390
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	391
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXII	392
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIII	393
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIV	394
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXV	395
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVI	396
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVII	397
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXVIII	398
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXIX	399
CHAPTER LXXXXXXXI	400

LIST OF FIGURES

FIGURE	PAGE
1. Department of Defense Organization Chart	83
2. Joint Chiefs of Staff Organization Chart	95
3. Military Officer Corps Assignments outside the Departments of Army, Navy, and Air Force, September-November, 1966	107

LIST OF FIGURES

- FIGURE
1. Department of Defense Organization Chart 41
 2. Joint Chiefs of Staff Organization Chart 42
 3. Military Service Corps Assignments outside the

Department of Army, Navy, and Air Force.

Department-Assignment, 1975 121

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

Since the end of World War II, there has been an increasing amount of debate and concern over the military's role in national security policy. The controversy over "unification," the dismissal of General MacArthur, and continuing public policy conflicts between the Administration and the Armed Services are only the surface manifestations of the underlying problem of an unclear delineation of military responsibility and position in the policy process. The nature of the security threat and the scope and intricacy of the policy process requires that the roles of participants be recognized and evaluated in their true perspective in order that the overall problem of national security may be better understood.

Unfortunately, most of the attention given the military role has considered only narrow aspects of the overall military influence or has been heavily weighted with bias, emotionalism, or sensationalism. While the efforts of Congress in structuring an effective security organization or the various scholarly attempts to identify and evaluate specific areas of military influence have contributed to a better understanding of the security process, few works have been offered which specifically relate to overall

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

Since the end of World War II, there has been an increasing amount of debate and concern over the military's role in national security policy. The controversy over unification, the dismissal of General MacArthur, and continuing public policy conflicts between the Administration and the Armed Services are only the surface manifestations of the underlying problem of an unclear delineation of military responsibility and position in the policy process. The nature of the security threat and the scope and intensity of the policy process requires that the rules of participation be recognized and evaluated in their true perspective in order that the overall problem of national security may be better understood. Unfortunately, most of the attention given the military role has considered only narrow aspects of the overall military influence or has been heavily weighted with bias, emotionalism, or sensationalism. While the efforts of Congress in structuring an effective security organization or the various scholarly attempts to identify and evaluate specific areas of military influence have contributed to a better understanding of the security process, few works have been offered which specifically relate to overall

military involvement in national security policy. On the other hand, there have been attempts to deny the military any but the most narrow participation in the policy process or to insist that military involvement be broadened to a point which might seriously endanger the nation's political structure. Positive efforts to find a responsible solution through reason and compromise are often overshadowed by the sensationalism which the alarmists and extremists employ.

The purpose of this paper is to attempt to cast military influence in its proper perspective within the overall security process. Conscious effort will be maintained to provide objectivity. Both sides of specific positions will be presented in most instances; however, the scope of the subject necessarily restricts the coverage to a survey and all areas and arguments cannot be presented in detail.

The second limitation imposed on the study concerns the definition of the term "military." Unless otherwise specified, military will refer to the military officer corps and will be restricted to those officers on active duty or retired officers who are functioning in an immediate post-retirement status. This limitation is necessary to differentiate between the military influence and the influence of the militarists. The latter group includes civilians as well as military personalities and wields a

military involvement in national security policy. On the other hand, there have been attempts to deny the military any but the most narrow participation in the policy process or to insist that military involvement be restricted to a point which might seriously endanger the nation's political structure. Positive efforts to find a responsible solution through reason and compromise are often overshadowed by the sensationalism which the extremes and extremists employ. The purpose of this paper is to attempt to cast military influence in its proper perspective within the overall security process. Concrete effort will be maintained to provide objectivity. Both sides of specific positions will be presented in most instances; however, the scope of the subject necessarily restricts the coverage to a survey and all areas and arguments cannot be presented in detail.

The second limitation imposed on the study concerns the definition of the term "military." Unless otherwise specified, military will refer to the military officer corps and will be restricted to those officers on active duty or retired officers who are functioning in an immediate post-retirement status. This limitation is necessary to differentiate between the military influence and the influence of the militarist. The latter group includes civilians as well as military personalities and wield a

considerably greater political influence than the officer corps of the various services. The line between military and militarist influence is sometimes indistinguishable and some situations will be omitted because sufficient doubt exists to orient properly a valid analysis. Other cases, where determination of the boundaries of influence is arbitrarily drawn, will be included because they are necessary to the overall perspective.

The study is necessarily limited by data availability. All research materials were restricted to documents and books generally available to the public. The information which rests in the classified files of the various Government agencies might cast considerably greater light on the subject of military influence; however, the study proceeds upon the assumption that any dramatic difference between the reflected image and actual practice could not long escape the public's attention because of intense political interest in the matter.

The development of the survey requires coverage of forces acting on the military role as well as a presentation of military influence itself. Therefore, Chapter II is designed to provide an insight into societal features acting on the military role. Later chapters will cover the factors which have contributed to the expanded military role. This part of the discussion is limited to the most

unusually greater political influence than the other
 corps of the various services. The line between military
 and political influence is somewhat indistinct and
 some situations will be omitted because sufficient doubt
 exists to admit properly a valid analysis. Other cases,
 where determination of the dominance of influence is prob-
 ably drawn, will be included because they are necessary
 to the overall perspective.

The study is necessarily limited by data availability.
 All research material was restricted to documents and
 books generally available to the public. The information
 which exists in the classified files of the various govern-
 ment agencies might have considerably greater light on the
 subject of military influence; however, the study proceeds
 upon the assumption that any possible difference between
 the collected facts and actual practice could not long
 escape the public's attention because of intense political
 interest in the matter.

The development of the survey requires coverage of
 factors acting on the military role as well as a presenta-
 tion of military influence itself. Therefore, Chapter II
 is designed to provide an insight into social factors
 acting on the military role. Later chapters will cover the
 factors which have contributed to the expanded military
 role. This part of the discussion is limited to the most

pertinent characteristics of the traditional civilian-military relationship and specifically covers civilian-military distrust, military professionalism and social isolation, and the civilian supremacy concept. The rest of Chapter II provides the basis for expanded military power by describing some of the factors which encouraged, or at least failed to restrict, military influence in the policy process.

Chapter III is concerned with the national security organization and the institutional atmosphere in which the military operates. The unification conflict is covered both to indicate the degree of influence of the various services as well as to provide an understanding of contemporary conflict among the services. The remainder of the chapter describes the "National Security Act of 1947," the security policy organization, and something of the emerging role of the Department of Defense.

The following chapter deals with specific military involvement in the policy process. This discussion attempts not only to cite degrees of involvement but also to indicate why the military are motivated to enter the various areas. Military influence in policy planning, implementation, and domestic affairs are analyzed on the basis of military expertise, policy coordination, policy representation, and general effects on society.

particular characteristics of the traditional civilian-

military relationship and specifically covers civilian-

military distrust, military professionalism and social

isolation, and the civilian supremacy concept. The rest of

Chapter II provides the basis for expanded military power

by describing some of the factors which encourage, or at

least, fail to restrict, military influence in the policy

process.

Chapter III is concerned with the national security

organization and the institutional atmosphere in which the

military operates. The military's conduct is covered

both to indicate the degree of influence of the various

services as well as to provide an understanding of con-

current conflict among the services. The remainder of the

chapter describes the National Security Act of 1947, the

security policy organization, and a summary of the varying

role of the Department of Defense.

The following chapter deals with specific military

involvement in the policy process. This discussion attempts

not only to give a picture of involvement but also to indi-

cate why the military are motivated to enter the various

areas. Military influence in policy planning, implementa-

tion, and domestic affairs are analyzed on the basis of

military expertise, policy coordination, policy recommenda-

tion, and general attitude on security.

Chapter V provides an analysis of military influence means and the problems of limiting the military role. Special emphasis is placed on the relation of the individual aspects of the military role to the formulation of an appropriate role in the overall national security process.

Whenever possible, the study relies on primary source materials in the form of Congressional hearings, diaries, public papers, and Government directives. Other sources, except those works chosen to reflect extreme viewpoints, have been selected on the basis of objectivity, recognized authoritativeness, or logically-constructed arguments.

CHAPTER II

THE EXPANSION OF THE MILITARY ROLE IN NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

In the 14 years since the end of World War II the traditional distinction between peace and war has been obliterated by a contest which knows no boundaries and no limits except those imposed on world communism by expediency. The competition is total--it is military, economic, scientific, political, diplomatic, cultural, and moral.¹

This description of the "cold war" was certainly applicable in 1960. While taking into consideration the subsequent tenor of the East-West competition which has led some students of international relations to disclaim the validity of the cold war concept,² the practical aspects of an anti-communist conflict still dominates the realities of United States security planning.³ The character of the

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Organizing for National Security, Interim report made by its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 86th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960), p. 1.

²J. William Fulbright, Old Myths and New Realities (New York: Random House, 1964), pp. 8-9; and Charles O. Lerche, Jr. and Abdul A. Said, Concepts of International Politics (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1964), p. 223. There is an increasing discourse on the obsolescence of the "cold war" concept, but few relevant substitutes have been forwarded to describe the present East-West relations.

³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Forces and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the

THE EXPANSION OF THE MILITARY ROLE IN

NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

In the 15 years since the end of World War II the traditional distinction between peace and war has been obliterated by a contest which knows no bounds and no limits except those imposed by world community by expediency. The competition is total; it is military, economic, scientific, political, diplomatic, colonial, and racial.¹

This description of the "cold war" was certainly applicable in 1960, while taking into consideration the subsequent trend of the East-West competition which has led some students of international relations to dismiss the validity of the cold war concept.² The practical aspects of an anti-communist conflict still dominates the realities of United States security planning.³ The character of the

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Organization for National Security, Interim report made by the subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 86th Cong., 1st Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960), p. 1.

²J. William Fulbright, Old Mornings and New Realities (New York: Random House, 1964), pp. 2-3, and Charles A. Latham, Jr. and Abdul A. Said, Concepts of International Politics (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1961), p. 123. There is an increasing discussion on the obsolescence of the "cold war" concept, but few relevant substitutes have been forwarded to describe the present East-West relations.

³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Forces and Subcommittee on Defense of the

continuing conflict between East and West has been the greatest contributor to the evolutionary process which has affected the nature and extent of military influence in the formulation and implementation of United States security policy.

At the termination of World War II, the military influence in national and international affairs had reached its zenith. This was caused by the nation's total mobilization in order to gain its military objective of unconditional surrender of Japan and Germany. For the first time in history, America had placed all its resources on the line, and great effort had been required to coordinate and integrate military and civilian contributions. The task of coordination was under the overall direction of military leaders.⁴ In fact, the military leadership was given such a free hand in the direction of the overall war effort that it has been reported that Presidential authority in the form of decision reversal was only exerted on two occasions.⁵

Committee on Appropriations, Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, Hearings, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., on S.2950, February 23-March 31, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 15-19.

⁴United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Defense Establishment, Hearings, 80th Cong., 1st Sess., on S.758, March 18-May 9, 1947 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1947), p. 25.

⁵Demetrios Caraley, The Politics of Military

continuing conflict between East and West has been the
greatest contributor to the evolutionary process which has
affected the nature and extent of military influence in the
formulation and implementation of United States security
policy.

At the conclusion of World War II, the military influence in national and international affairs had reached its zenith. This was caused by the nation's total mobilization in order to gain its military objective of unconditional surrender of Japan and Germany. For the first time in history, America had placed all its resources on the line and great effort had been required to coordinate and integrate military and civilian contributions. The task of coordination was under the overall direction of military leaders. In fact, the military leadership was given almost total control in the direction of the overall war effort that it has been reported that Presidential authority in the form of decision reversal was only exercised on two occasions.

1. Committee on Appropriations, Military Operations Subcommittee
Report for Fiscal Year 1967, Hearings, 90th Cong., 2d Sess.,
on H.R. 1253, February 15-March 31, 1968 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1968), pp. 12-13.

from Government Printing Office, 1947), p. 32.
Comp., Inc. 1947, March 18-Apr. 2, 1947 (Washington, D.C.).
Technical Assistance Administration, Washington, D.C.
United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed

Yet, as soon as the war had been successfully concluded, the position and influence of military leaders rapidly diminished as political leadership reasserted itself.

The period of peace, in the traditional sense, was soon over. The development of the cold war brought back the atmosphere of crisis in which military influence flourishes. Yet, other forces were at work, which were destined to change the character and direction of military influence in national security policy. The traditional civilian-military relationship would be reinforced through legislation. Rapid advances in technology and new concepts of diplomacy were to present new problems to which United States security policy would have to adjust.

I. TRADITIONAL CIVILIAN-MILITARY RELATIONSHIP

Some of the earliest political writings relating to the founding of the United States expressed the ambivalent attitude of Americans toward military influence. Alexander Hamilton wrote of the fear of a standing Army for the new republic and how this fear interfered with the necessity for security and strength.⁶ As a check on military

Unification (New York: Columbia University Press, 1966), pp. 19-20.

⁶Alexander Hamilton et al., The Federalist (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, Inc., 1948), pp. 115-119.

Yet, as soon as the war had been successfully concluded,
 the position and influence of military leaders rapidly
 diminished as political leadership transferred itself.
 The period of peace, in the traditional sense, was
 soon over. The development of the cold war brought back
 the emphasis of crisis in which military influence
 fluctuates. Yet, other forces were at work, which are
 destined to change the character and direction of military
 influence in national security policy. The traditional
 civilian-military relationship would be reinforced through
 innovation. Rapid advances in technology and new concepts
 of diplomacy were to present new problems to which policy
 states security policy would have to adjust.

I. TRADITIONAL CIVILIAN-MILITARY RELATIONSHIP

Some of the earliest political writings relating to
 the founding of the United States expressed the ambivalent
 attitude of Americans toward military influence. Alexander
 Hamilton wrote of the fear of a standing army for the new
 republic and how this fear interfered with the necessity
 for security and strength.¹ As a check on military

¹ Madison Papers, Vol. 1, 1788, University Press, 1962, pp. 17-18.
² Alexander Hamilton et al., The Federalist (New York: C. C. Norton and Company, Inc., 1963), pp. 11-12.

influence, the Constitution explicitly divided control of the Army between Congress and the President of the United States. In spite of a continuing concern, the American people have supported military forces to carry out policies and have seen fit to bestow the highest honors on military figures.

The traditional civilian-military relationship has, therefore, been a mixture of distrust and honor and of fear and respect. The position assumed, at any one time, has depended upon conditions and atmosphere.⁷ And the relationship has not been a one-sided affair inasmuch as the military has had occasion to exhibit the same emotional responses as the civilian.

Civilian-Military Distrust

Initially, civilian distrust of the military showed a fear that the armed forces would assume an active political role. After all, as Finer points out, assumption of the military willingly avoiding politics is not a "natural" condition. "Instead of asking why the military engage in politics," he states, "we ought surely to ask why they ever

⁷ Burton Sapin and Richard C. Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954), pp. 2-3.

influence, the Constitution explicitly divided control of the Army between Congress and the President of the United States. In spite of a continuing concern, the American people have supported military forces to carry out policies and have seen fit to reserve the highest honors to military figures.

The traditional civil-military relationship has, therefore, been a mixture of distrust and respect and has not been simple. The position assumed, at any one time, has depended upon conditions and circumstances.⁷ and the relationship has not been a one-sided affair inasmuch as the military has had occasion to exhibit the same emotional response as the civilian.

Civilian-Military Relations

Initially, civilian distrust of the military showed a fear that the armed forces would assume an active political role. After all, as Foner points out, assumption of the military willingly evading politics is not a "natural" condition. Instead of asking why the military avoids politics, he states, "we ought surely to ask why they ever

⁷ Arthur Schlesinger and Richard C. Lippman, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy (New York: New York University Press, 1954), pp. 2-3.

do otherwise."⁸ Yet, the fear of overt political actions, such as an attempt to gain civil power, have never presented a serious threat to United States democratic government.

Civilian fears and distrust of the military were reflected during the postwar period in several ways. During the conflict over the military's policy favoring a large standing army, the opposition to Universal Military Training generally adopted the stance that UMT would lead to a garrison state and the end of democratic government.⁹ Other fears of military influence concerned the threat of seeking military solutions to political problems.¹⁰ The most current source of distrust has been the so-called military industrial coalition for political power. The latter fear gained credence from the extent of defense expenditures and the prestigious office of the President who made the allegation.¹¹

⁸ Samuel E. Finer, The Man on Horseback (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, 1962), pp. 4-5.

⁹ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Training Corps Act, Hearings, 82d Cong., 2d Sess., on S.2441, February 7-14, 1952 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1952), pp. 223, 233, 244, 385, 399, and 533. Testimony in opposition to UMT was broadly based, representing Churches, labor, farmers, and private pacifist organizations, and the theme of opposition was generally the spectre of militarism.

¹⁰ Fulbright, op. cit., p. 116; and John M. Swomley, The Military Establishment (Boston: Beacon Press, 1964), p. 145.

¹¹ Harry H. Ranson, "Department of Defense: Unity or

11. The President who made the military
gained credence from the extent of defense expenditures and
industrial mobilization for political power. The recent fear
of a source of distrust has been the so-called military
solutions to political problems.¹² The war sup-
ports of military influence concerned the issue of seeking
peace and the end of democratic government.¹³ Over
the years the military has been the most important
factor in the political life of the United States. The
military has been the most important factor in the political
life of the United States. The military has been the most
important factor in the political life of the United States.
The military has been the most important factor in the political
life of the United States. The military has been the most
important factor in the political life of the United States.

11. 1944.

⁶ Samuel J. Freed, The Sun on Hockanigut (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, 1961), pp. 1-2.

and generally low standards of education.
private pacifist organizations, and the theme of opposition
broadly based, representing churches, labor, farmers, and
144, 180, 192, and 233. Testimony in opposition to this was
largely Government Printing Office, 1952), pp. 223, 231,
232 Comp., 10 part., on 2-14-1, February 1-14, 1952 (1952-
Services, National Security Training Corps Act, Hearing,
United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed

⁴⁰Wittelschmidt, op. cit., pp. 1167 and John M. Swales,
The Literary Calculations (Boston: Beacon Press, 1964).

U.S. DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

Military leaders, on the other hand, developed a distrust for civilians, specifically those involved with defense strategy. This distrust and contempt was generated by the feeling that the civilian civil servant was indecisive,¹² that the civilian leadership was ready to give up victories won on the battlefield,¹³ and that civilian strategists were not knowledgeable enough to rule on military matters.¹⁴

Numerous examples of mutual distrust between the civilian-military communities could be quoted. However, the single incident which best reflects the ambiguity that shrouds the issues is the various interpretations of the influx of military personnel into the State Department at the end of World War II. One viewpoint was that the

Confederation"; and Samuel P. Huntington, "Power Expertise and the Military Profession," American Defense Policy, eds. Wesley W. Posvar et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), pp. 168 and 186. Several other writers have attached even greater significance, perhaps more than is warranted, on President Eisenhower's remarks on the Military-Industrial complex and its impact on American Society.

¹²James M. Gavin, War and Peace in the Space Age (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1958), p. 166.

¹³Richard H. Rovere and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., The General and the President (New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1951), pp. 152-153.

¹⁴Huntington, "Power, Expertise and the Military Profession," op. cit., p. 189.

military were spreading their influence and political power base by infiltrating the foreign policy organ of the government.¹⁵ At the same time, the recruitment of military officers by the State Department brought an unfavorable reaction from General Norstad, Air Force member of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. The General felt "considerable misgivings about the extent of military participation in diplomatic decisions" which the practice might cause and further believed that the appointments were not in the best interests of the military establishment because it might be, in due course, attacked "as exercising too powerful an influence on our foreign policy."¹⁶

The source of the civilian distrust of the military originated in the distance which separates the military community from the general public and the civilian policy makers. The military's desire for isolation and the development of professionalism gave rise to one of the least understood concepts which plague military-civilian relations--the concept of the "military mind."

¹⁵ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., pp. 5-6. It should be noted that the more radical viewpoint, as expressed by Professor Swomley in his book, The Military Establishment, takes the stand that the military influx into the State Department in 1946 was a conscious infiltration to spread militarism.

¹⁶ Walter Millis (ed.), The Forrestal Diaries (New York: The Viking Press, 1951), pp. 315-316.

military were expressing their influence and political power
 used by influencing the foreign policy of the govern-
 ment.¹² At the same time, the recruitment of military
 officers by the State Department through an overseas re-
 sident from Germany was made. Air Force member of the Joint
 Chiefs of Staff. The General Staff "considerable misgivings
 about the extent of military participation in diplomatic
 decisions" which the President might cause and further per-
 sisted that the appointments were not in the best interests
 of the military establishment because it might be, in the
 course, attached "as distracting too powerful an influence
 on our foreign policy."¹³

The source of the civilian distrust of the military
 originated in the distance which separates the military
 community from the general public and the civilian policy
 maker. The military's desire for isolation and the
 development of professionalism gave rise to one of the
 least understood concepts which divide military-civilian
 relations--the concept of the "military club."

¹² Nathan and Snyder, The Role of the Military in
American Foreign Policy, pp. 212-213. It should be
 noted that the more radical viewpoint, as expressed by
 Professor Newman in his book, The Military Establishment,
 takes the stand that the military joined the State
 Department in 1902 was a conscious indication to spread
 militarism.

¹³ Walter Millis (ed.), The Foreign Office (New
 York: The Viking Press, 1921), pp. 115-116.

Military Professionalism and Social Isolation

In order to understand the relationship of the military to the state and to their functions in the national security policy process, the character and attitudes of the officer corps should be studied. According to Huntington, it is the officer corps which is "the active directing element of the military structure and is responsible for the military security of society."¹⁷ In addition, the emergence of military officers as an important leadership group has been noted as an element of modern American society.¹⁸

The recognition of the officer corps' position and influence within society should have led to an exacting study of this group. However, one study of the military role has determined that "far too little is known about the history of the armed forces, military policy and the relations of the military to national policy-making in the United States."¹⁹ This would appear to indicate that the

¹⁷ Samuel P. Huntington, The Soldier and the State (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1957), p. 3.

¹⁸ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., p. 6.

¹⁹ Burton Sapin, Richard C. Snyder, and H. W. Bruck, An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note (Princeton: Princeton University Organizational Behavioral Section, July, 1954), p. 8.

Military Professionalism and Social Isolation

In order to understand the relationship of the military to the state and to social functions in the national

security policy process, the character and attitudes of the

officer corps should be examined. According to Huntington,

it is the officer corps which is the active directing element

of the military structure and is responsible for the

military leadership of society.¹⁷ In addition, the

presence of military officers as an important leadership group

has been noted as an element of modern American society.¹⁸

The recognition of the officer corps' position and

influence within society should have led to an extensive

study of this group. However, one study of the military

has been published that has done little to shed light on the

history of the armed forces, military policy and the relationship

of the military to national policy-making in the

United States.¹⁹ This would appear to indicate that the

relationship between the military and the state

is a complex one.

¹⁷ Samuel P. Huntington, The Soldier and the State

(Cambridge, The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press,

1957), p. 2.

¹⁸ Journal of American Studies, 1, 1, 1967, p. 1.

¹⁹ Journal of American Studies, 1, 1, 1967, p. 1.

Journal of American Studies, 1, 1, 1967, p. 1.

Journal of American Studies, 1, 1, 1967, p. 1.

role of the military prior to World War II was not significant enough to attract the attention of political scientists.

The military officer corps incorporates the prerequisites of a pressure group. In fact, Finder finds that the military possess those qualities which make pressure groups most influential--centralized command, hierarchy, discipline, intercommunication, esprit de corps, and a corresponding isolation and self-sufficiency.²⁰ Yet, the military have one primary difference from the normal pressure group. This difference consists of a sincere correlation of the group interest with the national interest. This does not necessarily mean that the military believe that what is good for the armed forces is good for the nation but rather that "the officer has a responsibility to society because of his particular expertise of violence management."²¹

The difference between violence management and participation in the act of violence provided the key to professionalism. Even with today's rapidly-changing technology soldiers and sailors can be trained in a relatively-short scope of time to function as fighters. However, the

²⁰Finer, op. cit., p. 7.

²¹Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., pp. 14-15.

more of the military power to which it was not subject.
 It was enough to attract the attention of political leaders.
 The military officer corps incorporates the principle
 of a pressure group. In fact, under this type of
 military power those qualities which make pressure groups
 self-interest, centralized command, hierarchy, discipline,
 isolation and self-sufficiency.²⁰ The military has
 one primary difference from the normal pressure group.
 This difference consists of a sincere conviction of the
 group interest with the national interest. This does not
 necessarily mean that the military believe that what is
 good for the armed forces is good for the nation but rather
 that the officer has a responsibility to society because
 of his particular expertise of violence management.²¹
 The difference between violence management and par-
 ticipation in the act of violence provided the key to per-
 sonalization. Even with today's rapidly-changing technology
 soldiers and sailors can be trained in a relatively short
 scope of time to function as fighters. However, the

²⁰ Turner, op. cit., p. 7-1.
²¹ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, pp. 41-2.
 pp. 14-1.

professional officer must be trained over a long period of time and participate in many different fields of study. To understand his profession, the officer must have some idea of its relation to history, politics, economics, sociology, and psychology, as well as mastering some aspects of the physical sciences. "Just as a general education has become the prerequisite for entry into the professions of law and medicine," Huntington states, "it is now almost universally recognized as a desirable qualification for the professional officer."²² The obvious goal of the wide area of training is to provide the expertise in strategic and operational planning required of the nation's military leadership.

The development of expertise and professionalism, coupled with the ever-present civilian distrust of the military, tended to isolate the military officer corps from the civilian community. The character of military service with its frequent transfers of personnel and operational requirements that personnel be billeted close to their assignments further divided the two communities. The end result has been that the military, at many bases, attend their own churches, schools, and recreational facilities, and can be completely separated from the civilian community if they so desire. The extent of the social isolation is

²²Ibid., p. 14.

professional officer must be trained over a long period of time and participate in many different kinds of study. To understand his profession, the officer must have some idea of its relation to history, politics, economics, sociology, and psychology, as well as mastering some aspects of the physical sciences. Just as a general education has become the prerequisite for entry into the professions of law and medicine, "scientific studies" is now almost universally recognized as a scientific qualification for the professional officer.⁵² The obvious goal of this wide area of training is to provide the expertise in strategic and operational planning required of the officer's military leadership. The development of expertise and professionalism coupled with the ever-present civilian character of the military, tends to isolate the military officer corps from the civilian community. The character of military service when its technical features of personnel and operational requirements tend to isolate it further from civilian life. The military is thus divided into two communities. The result has been that the military, as many have noted, serves as a "closed society," and its members are "socially isolated from the civilian community." The extent of this social isolation is

clearly reflected by an article in The Washington Post which reported a Military Debutante Ball. The list of those girls presented, as well as significant guests, were all part of the military society; and even the music was furnished by military musicians.²³

The nature of professionalism and its corresponding professional and social isolation were contributing factors to civilian-military distrust. Yet, this factor of distrust would not be of much significance to the national security policy process except that it undoubtedly contributes to the construction of the concept of the "military mind." Most writers on military policy or the role of the military in national defense policy state that some aspect of policy is the result of or colored by the military mind. Even though many writers liberally utilize the concept either in defense of the military role or in a derogatory manner, few have developed the validity of the imagery. This situation was described in one study of the military role by the statement that:

There has been a good deal written about the "military mind," some of it by responsible and knowledgeable observers and scholars. Much of this literature has been characterized by certain doubts and fears about the nature and limitations of military thinking. However . . . it must be said that

²³ News item in The Washington Post, December 30, 1966.

directly reflected by an article in The Washington Post which reported a Military Committee Bill. The list of those given prominence, as well as significant passage, was all part of the military society; and even the main one included by military historians.²²

The nature of professionalization and its corresponding institutional and social isolation were contributing factors to civilian-military distrust. Yet, this factor of distrust would not be of such significance to the national security policy process except that it undoubtedly contributed to the construction of the concept of the "military mind." Most writers on military policy or the role of the military in national defense policy state that some aspect of policy is the result of or colored by the military mind. Even though many writers literally utilize the concept, there is evidence of the military role in a secondary manner, few have developed the validity of the concept. This situation was corrected in one study of the military role by the statement that:

There has been a good deal written about the "military mind," some of it by responsible and knowledgeable observers and scholars. Much of this literature has been characterized by certain doubts and fears about the nature and limitations of military thinking. However . . . it must be said that

²² See also in The Washington Post, December 30,

none of the writers who have dealt with it have done very much to clarify or to develop the concept. The "military mind" has been for the most part an impressionistic notion rather than an analytic concept. It is also true, perhaps inevitably, that there has been little if any systematic scientific investigation of the motivation of career military officers.²⁴

Regardless of the concept's validity, it has been widely accepted and, therefore, must be considered in reaching an understanding of the interaction of forces which affect the military's influence in policy formulation. If civilian participants in the policy-making process attribute military advice and recommendations to qualities of the "military mind," the prestige and influence of the military professional decreases and his function more or less reverts to tactician rather than strategist. Therefore, some popularly-accepted characteristics of the military mind should be reviewed.

A study made in 1954 gathered the following "typical" characteristics and interpretations of stereotyped military thinking: uncreative in thought and problem analysis because it relies on tradition rather than benefiting from recent experience; inability to understand and relate politico-military relationships or to give adequate weight to non-military factors; approaches most social issues and

²⁴ Sapin et al., An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note, op. cit., p. 24.

none of the writers who have dealt with it have been very much to clarify or to develop the concept. The "military mind" has been for the most part an imprecise, non-analytic notion rather than an analytic concept. It is also true, however, that there has been little if any systematic scientific investigation of the motivation of career military officers.²

Regardless of the concept's validity, it has been

widely accepted and, therefore, must be considered in reaching an understanding of the interaction of forces which affect the military's influence in policy formulation. It is a common participant in the policy-making process. It receives military advice and recommendations to evaluate of the "military mind," the prestige and influence of the military professional decisions and his function more or less tends to tactical rather than strategic. Therefore, some generally-accepted characteristics of the military mind should be reviewed.

A study made in 1954 gathered the following "typical" characteristics and distortions of stereotyped military thinking, unresponsive to thought and problem analysis because it relies on tradition rather than benefiting from recent scientific findings in psychology and related fields. It is also a distortion of the military's weight in policy-making. It is a distortion of the military's weight in policy-making. It is a distortion of the military's weight in policy-making.

² See, for example, Journal of the American Psychological Association, 51, 1954, 10, 100-101, 102-103, 104-105, 106-107, 108-109, 110-111, 112-113, 114-115, 116-117, 118-119, 120-121, 122-123, 124-125, 126-127, 128-129, 130-131, 132-133, 134-135, 136-137, 138-139, 140-141, 142-143, 144-145, 146-147, 148-149, 150-151, 152-153, 154-155, 156-157, 158-159, 160-161, 162-163, 164-165, 166-167, 168-169, 170-171, 172-173, 174-175, 176-177, 178-179, 180-181, 182-183, 184-185, 186-187, 188-189, 190-191, 192-193, 194-195, 196-197, 198-199, 200-201, 202-203, 204-205, 206-207, 208-209, 210-211, 212-213, 214-215, 216-217, 218-219, 220-221, 222-223, 224-225, 226-227, 228-229, 230-231, 232-233, 234-235, 236-237, 238-239, 240-241, 242-243, 244-245, 246-247, 248-249, 250-251, 252-253, 254-255, 256-257, 258-259, 260-261, 262-263, 264-265, 266-267, 268-269, 270-271, 272-273, 274-275, 276-277, 278-279, 280-281, 282-283, 284-285, 286-287, 288-289, 290-291, 292-293, 294-295, 296-297, 298-299, 300-301, 302-303, 304-305, 306-307, 308-309, 310-311, 312-313, 314-315, 316-317, 318-319, 320-321, 322-323, 324-325, 326-327, 328-329, 330-331, 332-333, 334-335, 336-337, 338-339, 340-341, 342-343, 344-345, 346-347, 348-349, 350-351, 352-353, 354-355, 356-357, 358-359, 360-361, 362-363, 364-365, 366-367, 368-369, 370-371, 372-373, 374-375, 376-377, 378-379, 380-381, 382-383, 384-385, 386-387, 388-389, 390-391, 392-393, 394-395, 396-397, 398-399, 400-401, 402-403, 404-405, 406-407, 408-409, 410-411, 412-413, 414-415, 416-417, 418-419, 420-421, 422-423, 424-425, 426-427, 428-429, 430-431, 432-433, 434-435, 436-437, 438-439, 440-441, 442-443, 444-445, 446-447, 448-449, 450-451, 452-453, 454-455, 456-457, 458-459, 460-461, 462-463, 464-465, 466-467, 468-469, 470-471, 472-473, 474-475, 476-477, 478-479, 480-481, 482-483, 484-485, 486-487, 488-489, 490-491, 492-493, 494-495, 496-497, 498-499, 500-501, 502-503, 504-505, 506-507, 508-509, 510-511, 512-513, 514-515, 516-517, 518-519, 520-521, 522-523, 524-525, 526-527, 528-529, 530-531, 532-533, 534-535, 536-537, 538-539, 540-541, 542-543, 544-545, 546-547, 548-549, 550-551, 552-553, 554-555, 556-557, 558-559, 560-561, 562-563, 564-565, 566-567, 568-569, 570-571, 572-573, 574-575, 576-577, 578-579, 580-581, 582-583, 584-585, 586-587, 588-589, 590-591, 592-593, 594-595, 596-597, 598-599, 600-601, 602-603, 604-605, 606-607, 608-609, 610-611, 612-613, 614-615, 616-617, 618-619, 620-621, 622-623, 624-625, 626-627, 628-629, 630-631, 632-633, 634-635, 636-637, 638-639, 640-641, 642-643, 644-645, 646-647, 648-649, 650-651, 652-653, 654-655, 656-657, 658-659, 660-661, 662-663, 664-665, 666-667, 668-669, 670-671, 672-673, 674-675, 676-677, 678-679, 680-681, 682-683, 684-685, 686-687, 688-689, 690-691, 692-693, 694-695, 696-697, 698-699, 700-701, 702-703, 704-705, 706-707, 708-709, 710-711, 712-713, 714-715, 716-717, 718-719, 720-721, 722-723, 724-725, 726-727, 728-729, 730-731, 732-733, 734-735, 736-737, 738-739, 740-741, 742-743, 744-745, 746-747, 748-749, 750-751, 752-753, 754-755, 756-757, 758-759, 760-761, 762-763, 764-765, 766-767, 768-769, 770-771, 772-773, 774-775, 776-777, 778-779, 780-781, 782-783, 784-785, 786-787, 788-789, 790-791, 792-793, 794-795, 796-797, 798-799, 800-801, 802-803, 804-805, 806-807, 808-809, 810-811, 812-813, 814-815, 816-817, 818-819, 820-821, 822-823, 824-825, 826-827, 828-829, 830-831, 832-833, 834-835, 836-837, 838-839, 840-841, 842-843, 844-845, 846-847, 848-849, 850-851, 852-853, 854-855, 856-857, 858-859, 860-861, 862-863, 864-865, 866-867, 868-869, 870-871, 872-873, 874-875, 876-877, 878-879, 880-881, 882-883, 884-885, 886-887, 888-889, 890-891, 892-893, 894-895, 896-897, 898-899, 900-901, 902-903, 904-905, 906-907, 908-909, 910-911, 912-913, 914-915, 916-917, 918-919, 920-921, 922-923, 924-925, 926-927, 928-929, 930-931, 932-933, 934-935, 936-937, 938-939, 940-941, 942-943, 944-945, 946-947, 948-949, 950-951, 952-953, 954-955, 956-957, 958-959, 960-961, 962-963, 964-965, 966-967, 968-969, 970-971, 972-973, 974-975, 976-977, 978-979, 980-981, 982-983, 984-985, 986-987, 988-989, 990-991, 992-993, 994-995, 996-997, 998-999, 1000-1001, 1002-1003, 1004-1005, 1006-1007, 1008-1009, 1010-1011, 1012-1013, 1014-1015, 1016-1017, 1018-1019, 1020-1021, 1022-1023, 1024-1025, 1026-1027, 1028-1029, 1030-1031, 1032-1033, 1034-1035, 1036-1037, 1038-1039, 1040-1041, 1042-1043, 1044-1045, 1046-1047, 1048-1049, 1050-1051, 1052-1053, 1054-1055, 1056-1057, 1058-1059, 1060-1061, 1062-1063, 1064-1065, 1066-1067, 1068-1069, 1070-1071, 1072-1073, 1074-1075, 1076-1077, 1078-1079, 1080-1081, 1082-1083, 1084-1085, 1086-1087, 1088-1089, 1090-1091, 1092-1093, 1094-1095, 1096-1097, 1098-1099, 1100-1101, 1102-1103, 1104-1105, 1106-1107, 1108-1109, 1110-1111, 1112-1113, 1114-1115, 1116-1117, 1118-1119, 1120-1121, 1122-1123, 1124-1125, 1126-1127, 1128-1129, 1130-1131, 1132-1133, 1134-1135, 1136-1137, 1138-1139, 1140-1141, 1142-1143, 1144-1145, 1146-1147, 1148-1149, 1150-1151, 1152-1153, 1154-1155, 1156-1157, 1158-1159, 1160-1161, 1162-1163, 1164-1165, 1166-1167, 1168-1169, 1170-1171, 1172-1173, 1174-1175, 1176-1177, 1178-1179, 1180-1181, 1182-1183, 1184-1185, 1186-1187, 1188-1189, 1190-1191, 1192-1193, 1194-1195, 1196-1197, 1198-1199, 1200-1201, 1202-1203, 1204-1205, 1206-1207, 1208-1209, 1210-1211, 1212-1213, 1214-1215, 1216-1217, 1218-1219, 1220-1221, 1222-1223, 1224-1225, 1226-1227, 1228-1229, 1230-1231, 1232-1233, 1234-1235, 1236-1237, 1238-1239, 1240-1241, 1242-1243, 1244-1245, 1246-1247, 1248-1249, 1250-1251, 1252-1253, 1254-1255, 1256-1257, 1258-1259, 1260-1261, 1262-1263, 1264-1265, 1266-1267, 1268-1269, 1270-1271, 1272-1273, 1274-1275, 1276-1277, 1278-1279, 1280-1281, 1282-1283, 1284-1285, 1286-1287, 1288-1289, 1290-1291, 1292-1293, 1294-1295, 1296-1297, 1298-1299, 1300-1301, 1302-1303, 1304-1305, 1306-1307, 1308-1309, 1310-1311, 1312-1313, 1314-1315, 1316-1317, 1318-1319, 1320-1321, 1322-1323, 1324-1325, 1326-1327, 1328-1329, 1330-1331, 1332-1333, 1334-1335, 1336-1337, 1338-1339, 1340-1341, 1342-1343, 1344-1345, 1346-1347, 1348-1349, 1350-1351, 1352-1353, 1354-1355, 1356-1357, 1358-1359, 1360-1361, 1362-1363, 1364-1365, 1366-1367, 1368-1369, 1370-1371, 1372-1373, 1374-1375, 1376-1377, 1378-1379, 1380-1381, 1382-1383, 1384-1385, 1386-1387, 1388-1389, 1390-1391, 1392-1393, 1394-1395, 1396-1397, 1398-1399, 1400-1401, 1402-1403, 1404-1405, 1406-1407, 1408-1409, 1410-1411, 1412-1413, 1414-1415, 1416-1417, 1418-1419, 1420-1421, 1422-1423, 1424-1425, 1426-1427, 1428-1429, 1430-1431, 1432-1433, 1434-1435, 1436-1437, 1438-1439, 1440-1441, 1442-1443, 1444-1445, 1446-1447, 1448-1449, 1450-1451, 1452-1453, 1454-1455, 1456-1457, 1458-1459, 1460-1461, 1462-1463, 1464-1465, 1466-1467, 1468-1469, 1470-1471, 1472-1473, 1474-1475, 1476-1477, 1478-1479, 1480-1481, 1482-1483, 1484-1485, 1486-1487, 1488-1489, 1490-1491, 1492-1493, 1494-1495, 1496-1497, 1498-1499, 1500-1501, 1502-1503, 1504-1505, 1506-1507, 1508-1509, 1510-1511, 1512-1513, 1514-1515, 1516-1517, 1518-1519, 1520-1521, 1522-1523, 1524-1525, 1526-1527, 1528-1529, 1530-1531, 1532-1533, 1534-1535, 1536-1537, 1538-1539, 1540-1541, 1542-1543, 1544-1545, 1546-1547, 1548-1549, 1550-1551, 1552-1553, 1554-1555, 1556-1557, 1558-1559, 1560-1561, 1562-1563, 1564-1565, 1566-1567, 1568-1569, 1570-1571, 1572-1573, 1574-1575, 1576-1577, 1578-1579, 1580-1581, 1582-1583, 1584-1585, 1586-1587, 1588-1589, 1590-1591, 1592-1593, 1594-1595, 1596-1597, 1598-1599, 1600-1601, 1602-1603, 1604-1605, 1606-1607, 1608-1609, 1610-1611, 1612-1613, 1614-1615, 1616-1617, 1618-1619, 1620-1621, 1622-1623, 1624-1625, 1626-1627, 1628-1629, 1630-1631, 1632-1633, 1634-1635, 1636-1637, 1638-1639, 1640-1641, 1642-1643, 1644-1645, 1646-1647, 1648-1649, 1650-1651, 1652-1653, 1654-1655, 1656-1657, 1658-1659, 1660-1661, 1662-1663, 1664-1665, 1666-1667, 1668-1669, 1670-1671, 1672-1673, 1674-1675, 1676-1677, 1678-1679, 1680-1681, 1682-1683, 1684-1685, 1686-1687, 1688-1689, 1690-1691, 1692-1693, 1694-1695, 1696-1697, 1698-1699, 1700-1701, 1702-1703, 1704-1705, 1706-1707, 1708-1709, 1710-1711, 1712-1713, 1714-1715, 1716-1717, 1718-1719, 1720-1721, 1722-1723, 1724-1725, 1726-1727, 1728-1729, 1730-1731, 1732-1733, 1734-1735, 1736-1737, 1738-1739, 1740-1741, 1742-1743, 1744-1745, 1746-1747, 1748-1749, 1750-1751, 1752-1753, 1754-1755, 1756-1757, 1758-1759, 1760-1761, 1762-1763, 1764-1765, 1766-1767, 1768-1769, 1770-1771, 1772-1773, 1774-1775, 1776-1777, 1778-1779, 1780-1781, 1782-1783, 1784-1785, 1786-1787, 1788-1789, 1790-1791, 1792-1793, 1794-1795, 1796-1797, 1798-1799, 1800-1801, 1802-1803, 1804-1805, 1806-1807, 1808-1809, 1810-1811, 1812-1813, 1814-1815, 1816-1817, 1818-1819, 1820-1821, 1822-1823, 1824-1825, 1826-1827, 1828-1829, 1830-1831, 1832-1833, 1834-1835, 1836-1837, 1838-1839, 1840-1841, 1842-1843, 1844-1845, 1846-1847, 1848-1849, 1850-1851, 1852-1853, 1854-1855, 1856-1857, 1858-1859, 1860-1861, 1862-1863, 1864-1865, 1866-1867, 1868-1869, 1870-1871, 1872-1873, 1874-1875, 1876-1877, 1878-1879, 1880-1881, 1882-1883, 1884-1885, 1886-1887, 1888-1889, 1890-1891, 1892-1893, 1894-1895, 1896-1897, 1898-1899, 1900-1901, 1902-1903, 1904-1905, 1906-1907, 1908-1909, 1910-1911, 1912-1913, 1914-1915, 1916-1917, 1918-1919, 1920-1921, 1922-1923, 1924-1925, 1926-1927, 1928-1929, 1930-1931, 1932-1933, 1934-1935, 1936-1937, 1938-1939, 1940-1941, 1942-1943, 1944-1945, 1946-1947, 1948-1949, 1950-1951, 1952-1953, 1954-1955, 1956-1957, 1958-1959, 1960-1961, 1962-1963, 1964-1965, 1966-1967, 1968-1969, 1970-1971, 1972-1973, 1974-1975, 1976-1977, 1978-1979, 1980-1981, 1982-1983, 1984-1985, 1986-1987, 1988-1989, 1990-1991, 1992-1993, 1994-1995, 1996-1997, 1998-1999, 2000-2001, 2002-2003, 2004-2005, 2006-2007, 2008-2009, 2010-2011, 2012-2013, 2014-2015, 2016-2017, 2018-2019, 2020-2021, 2022-2023, 2024-2025, 2026-2027, 2028-2029, 2030-2031, 2032-2033, 2034-2035, 2036-2037, 2038-2039, 2040-2041, 2042-2043, 2044-2045, 2046-2047, 2048-2049, 2050-2051, 2052-2053, 2054-2055, 2056-2057, 2058-2059, 2060-2061, 2062-2063, 2064-2065, 2066-2067, 2068-2069, 2070-2071, 2072-2073, 2074-2075, 2076-2077, 2078-2079, 2080-2081, 2082-2083, 2084-2085, 2086-2087, 2088-2089, 2090-2091, 2092-2093, 2094-2095, 2096-2097, 2098-2099, 2100-2101, 2102-2103, 2104-2105, 2106-2107, 2108-2109, 2110-2111, 2112-2113, 2114-2115, 2116-2117, 2118-2119, 2120-2121, 2122-2123, 2124-2125, 2126-2127, 2128-2129, 2130-2131, 2132-2133, 2134-2135, 2136-2137, 2138-2139, 2140-2141, 2142-2143, 2144-2145, 2146-2147, 2148-2149, 2150-2151, 2152-2153, 2154-2155, 2156-2157, 2158-2159, 2160-2161, 2162-2163, 2164-2165, 2166-2167, 2168-2169, 2170-2171, 2172-2173, 2174-2175, 2176-2177, 2178-2179, 2180-2181, 2182-2183, 2184-2185, 2186-2187, 2188-2189, 2190-2191, 2192-2193, 2194-2195, 2196-2197, 2198-2199, 2200-2201, 2202-2203, 2204-2205, 2206-2207, 2208-2209, 2210-2211, 2212-2213, 2214-2215, 2216-2217, 2218-2219, 2220-2221, 2222-2223, 2224-2225, 2226-2227, 2228-2229, 2230-2231, 2232-2233, 2234-2235, 2236-2237, 2238-2239, 2240-2241, 2242-2243, 2244-2245, 2246-2247, 2248-2249, 2250-2251, 2252-2253, 2254-2255, 2256-2257, 2258-2259, 2260-2261, 2262-2263, 2264-2265, 2266-2267, 2268-2269, 2270-2271, 2272-2273, 2274-2275, 2276-2277, 2278-2279, 2280-2281, 2282-2283, 2284-2285, 2286-2287, 2288-2289, 2290-2291, 2292-2293, 2294-2295, 2296-2297, 2298-2299, 2300-2301, 2302-2303, 2304-2305, 2306-2307, 2308-2309, 2310-2311, 2312-2313, 2314-2315, 2316-2317, 2318-2319, 2320-2321, 2322-2323, 2324-2325, 2326-2327, 2328-2329, 2330-2331, 2332-2333, 2334-2335, 2336-2337, 2338-2339, 2340-2341, 2342-2343, 2344-2345, 2346-2347, 2348-2349, 2350-2351, 2352-2353, 2354-2355, 2356-2357, 2358-2359, 2360-2361, 2362-2363, 2364-2365, 2366-2367, 2368-2369, 2370-2371, 2372-2373, 2374-2375, 2376-2377, 2378-2379, 2380-2381, 2382-2383, 2384-2385, 2386-2387, 2388-2389, 2390-2391, 2392-2393, 2394-2395, 2396-2397, 2398-2399, 2400-2401, 2402-2403, 2404-2405, 2406-2407, 2408-2409, 2410-2411, 2412-2413, 2414-2415, 2416-2417, 2418-2419, 2420-2421,

situations in an authoritarian manner and has little respect or regard for civilian authority; thought is based on a narrow military scope and the mind is insulated from non-military knowledge; and the seeking of military solutions to all problems whether military or not.²⁵

Finer was more charitable in that he attributed the traits of courage, discipline, self-sacrifice, and patriotism to the character of the soldier.²⁶ On the other hand, some writers have gone to the extreme of accusing the military of being warmongers and completely lacking in personal or professional integrity. Such was the case with Swomley when he accused the military of prefabricating the intelligence report that cited the imminent danger of a communist conquest of Europe in 1948. The report was used by President Truman as a basis for asking for Universal Military Training and the Marshall Plan. Swomley also intimated that the U-2 incident of May 1960 was planned by the military to wreck chances for peace by breaking up the summit conference.²⁷

Most of the alleged traditional or typical characteristics of the military mind do not correspond with the

²⁵ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., p. 20.

²⁶ Finer, op. cit., p. 11.

²⁷ Swomley, op. cit., pp. 64-65 and 110.

affirmation in an authoritative manner and has little
weight or regard for civilian authority; thought is based
on a narrow military scope and the aim is insulated from
non-military knowledge; and the making of military deci-
sions on all problems whether military or not.⁵⁵

There was more available in that he attributed the
lack of courage, discipline, self-sacrifice, and patriot-
ism to the character of the soldier.⁵⁶ On the other hand,
some writers have gone to the extreme of accusing the mili-
tary of being autocratic and completely lacking in personal
or professional integrity. Such was the case with Goetting
when he accused the military of perpetrating the assassi-
nation report that cited the imminent danger of a communist
conquest of Europe in 1948. The report was used by Gen-
eral Truman as a basis for asking for Universal Military
Training and the National Youth Leadership also indicated
that the 1-5 incident of May 1950 was planned by the mili-
tary to wreck chances for peace by breaking up the commu-
nist.⁵⁷

Most of the alleged traditional or typical charac-
teristics of the military that do not correspond with the

⁵⁵ Japan and America, The Role of the Military in
American Foreign Policy, pp. 212, p. 19.

⁵⁶ Japan and America, The Role of the Military in
American Foreign Policy, pp. 212, p. 19.

⁵⁷ Japan and America, The Role of the Military in
American Foreign Policy, pp. 212, p. 19.

realities of contemporary military thought or that exhibited in the past twenty years. This is not to imply that the military mind does not exist, but only that the separation of the civilian-military communities and the actions of a few military officers have been permitted to distort the concept of the military mind. The distortion becomes readily apparent when one attempts to match narrow concepts to the actions and thoughts of the most prominent military men of the past twenty years. These would include: General George C. Marshall, who originated the plan for Europe's economic recovery and, subsequently, won a Nobel Peace prize;²⁸ General MacArthur's concern for the economic and political aspects of postwar Japanese government which he so skillfully developed while serving as the military governor there;²⁹ Generals Eisenhower and Bradley, who preached that the military must have a deep concern for the civilian economy while they were Army Chiefs of Staff;³⁰ General Ridgeway's opposition to involvement in the French Viet Nam struggle in 1954 for politico-economic reasons as well as

²⁸ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., p. 6.

²⁹ Caraley, op. cit., p. 177.

³⁰ Bernard Brodie, Strategy in the Missile Age (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1959), pp. 366-367.

realization of contemporary military concepts in that which
 had in the past twenty years. This is not to imply that
 the military mind does not exist, but only that the concep-
 tion of the civilian-military commission and the division
 of a few military officers have been permitted to distort
 the concept of the military mind. The division between
 readily apparent when one attempts to make narrow concepts
 of the actions and thoughts of the most prominent military
 men of the past twenty years. These would include General
 George C. Marshall, who originated the plan for Europe's
 economic recovery and, subsequently, for a global security
 plan.²⁶ General Marshall's concept for the economic and
 political aspects of postwar Japanese government which is
 so skillfully developed while serving as the military gov-
 ernor general.²⁷ General Eisenhower and Bradley, who preached
 that the military must have a heavy command for the civilian
 economy while they were Army Chiefs of Staff.²⁸ General
 Eisenhower's opposition to intervention in the Korean War was
 strongly in 1954 for political-economic reasons as well as

²⁶ Japan and Korea, The Role of the Military in
American Foreign Policy, pp. 247-250.

²⁷ Marshall, op. cit., p. 130.

²⁸ General Eisenhower, Speeches to the People, pp. 328-
 329.

military limitations;³¹ and General Taylor, whose "unconventional" military thinking led to his recall from retirement to become President Kennedy's Chief of Joint Chiefs of Staff.³²

Huntington, who must be considered one of the leading scholars on military behavior, probably comes closest to a relevant concept in his analysis of military thinking. He states that:

This responsibility as protectors of the state⁷ leads the military: (1) to view the state as the basic unit of political organization; (2) to stress the continuing nature of threats to the military security of the state and the continuing likelihood of war; (3) to emphasize the magnitude and immediacy of the security threats; (4) to favor the maintenance of strong, diverse, and ready military forces; (5) to oppose the extension of state commitments and involvement of the state in war except when victory is certain.³³

This explanation of the "military mind" appears more valid than the popular concept because it generally covers the actions of military officers while acting in their official capacity as advisers on national security policy formulation. At the same time, the concept recognizes the

³¹ Roscoe Drummond and Gaston Goblentz, Duel at the Brink (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1960), pp. 116-120.

³² Jack Raymond, Power at the Pentagon (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1964), p. 259.

³³ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., pp. 64-65.

... military limitations;²¹ and General Taylor, whose views
 ... military thinking led to his recall from office
 ... to become President Kennedy's Chief of Joint Chiefs of
 Staff.²²

... Huntington, who must be considered one of the lead-
 ingponents of military education, previously noted that
 ... a common concept in his analysis of military thinking.
 He stated that:

This responsibility for protection of the state
 leads the military: (i) to view the state as the
 basis unit of political organization; (ii) to stress
 the continuing nature of threats to the military
 security of the state and the continuing likelihood
 of war; (iii) to emphasize the magnitude and immediacy
 of the security interest; (iv) to favor the maintenance
 of strong, diverse, and ready military forces; (v)
 to oppose the extension of state commitments and
 involvement of the state in war except when clearly
 in the state's interest.²³

This rejection of the "military mind" appears more
 valid than the popular concept because it correctly points
 the actions of military officials while acting in their
 official capacity as advisors on national security policy
 formulation. At the same time, the concept recognizes the

²¹ Bruce Gimmerson and Garret Gohmert, Goal at the
 Edge (New York: Doubleday and Company, 1960),
 pp. 118-119.

²² Jack Hinson, Goal at the Edge (New York:
 Harper and Row, 1961), pp. 118-119.

²³ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, pp. 212-
 pp. 213-214.

fact that men, even the military officer corps, base their thinking on preconceived values shaped by environment and the ability to reason. Therefore, rather than a "military mind," the concept should encompass the plural, "military minds," which differs not only between the different branches of the armed forces but also within the various parts of the individual services. Thus, for instance, one could expect to find a different trend of thought in the naval aviator, surface line officer, staff corps, etc. However, some degree of uniform condition can probably be expected from the common military factors such as discipline, professionalism, corporate self-interest, patriotism, etc.³⁴ "A general does not always think exclusively as a general might be expected to," explains Brodie when relating the military's concern for non-military problems, "one reason being that he is a man with a distinctive personal history as well as being a general."³⁵

The concept or misconception of the military mind also leads to the inevitable fear of too great a military influence in national policy. This fear is generally expressed in terms of the dangers of militarism or garrison state.

³⁴Sapin et al., An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note, op. cit., pp. 31-32.

³⁵Brodie, op. cit., p. 367.

There can be little doubt that this idea affects policy makers, especially in view of the changing role of the military in the policy process and the cooperation and coordination required of the civilian-military leadership to forge a relevant and effective policy.³⁶

Civilian Supremacy Concept

Civilian supremacy over the military was a prime concern of the founding fathers of the United States. Explicit powers to control any military political threat were provided to both Congress and the President. And therein lies much of the problem confronting the civilian supremacy concept. Civilian supremacy is assured only when the authority and responsibility for military policy and action resides in the civilian political leadership. By dividing responsibility between the executive and legislative branches, the struggle between Presidential control and Congressional control was encouraged. The proponents of Presidential control charge that the legislature lacks sufficient organization and is too cumbersome to effectuate proper control and direction of the military forces. On the other hand, Congress feels that it more closely reflects the will of the people and is not as susceptible to becoming

³⁶ Sapin et al., An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note, op. cit., p. 23.

There can be little doubt that this latter policy
 subject, especially in view of the changing role of the mili-
 tary in the policy process and the cooperation and coordina-
 tion required of the civilian-military leadership to bring a
 coherent and effective policy.¹⁸

Civilian Responsibility

Civilian responsibility over the military was a topic
 of concern of the founding fathers at the 1787 debate. The
 explicit power to control the military was placed in the hands
 provided to both Congress and the President. The debate
 lies much of the power controlling the military was
 Congress. Civilian responsibility is assured only when the
 authority and responsibility for military policy and action
 resides in the civilian political leadership. By dividing
 responsibility between the executive and legislative
 branches, the struggle between presidential control and
 Congressional control was introduced. The proponents of
 presidential control charge that the legislature lacks suf-
 ficient organization and is too cumbersome to effectuate
 proper control and direction of the military forces. On
 the other hand, Congress fears that it may itself reflect
 the will of the people and be not so susceptible to becoming

¹⁸ "The Role of the Military in the Policy Process," *Journal of the American Academy of Political and Social Science*, 22, 1967, p. 1.

a prisoner of military advisers as is the President.³⁷ Huntington further finds that objective civilian control, control by a single governmental element, best minimizes military political power through greater professionalization of the military officer corps.³⁸ Thus, the military would not be encouraged to play the executive branch against the legislative arm of government with its resultant politicalization of the military. Finer takes exception to this idea of enforcing civilian supremacy. "The reason is that the very nature of professionalism on which Huntington sets such store and which he regards as politically sterile, in fact," Finer argues, "often thrusts the military into collision with civil authorities." This happens because the military's consciousness of themselves may persuade them that their responsibility is to the state rather than the government in power through contrasting the national community as a continuing corporation with temporary incumbents in control. Also, as specialists in their field, the military may feel that they alone are competent to deal with "pure" military matters.³⁹

³⁷ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., p. 81.

³⁸ Ibid., p. 84.

³⁹ Finer, op. cit., pp. 25-27.

a prisoner of military advisers as is the President.²⁷ Huntington further finds that objective civilian control, control by a single governmental element, best insures military political power through greater professionalization of the military officer corps.²⁸ Thus, the military

would not be encouraged to play the executive game against the legislative arm of government with its ready-made politicalization of the military. There takes exception to this idea of enforcing civilian supremacy. "The reason is that the very nature of professionalism on which Huntington sets such store and which he regards as politically sterile, in fact," Tiner argues, "often thrives the military into collision with civil authorities." This

happens because the military's consciousness of themselves may persuade them that their responsibility is to the state rather than the government in power through controlling the national community as a continuing corporation with future responsibility in control. Also, as specialists in their field, the military may feel that they alone are competent to deal with "pure" military matters.²⁹

²⁷ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, pp. 111, 112.

p. 111.

²⁸ Ibid., p. 112.

²⁹ Tiner, op. cit., pp. 22-23.

There has been some evidence to support Finer's conclusions. Perhaps the best known and most explicit examples of this argument were the two following statements by General MacArthur:

For example, I find in existence a new and heretofore unknown and dangerous concept that the members of our armed forces owe primary allegiance and loyalty to those who temporarily exercise the authority of the executive branch of government, rather than to the country and its Constitution which they are sworn to defend.

No proposition could be more dangerous. None could cast greater doubt upon the integrity of the armed forces.⁴⁰

We of the military shall always do what we are told to do, but if this nation is to survive, we must trust the soldier once our statesmen have failed to preserve the peace We must proclaim again and again and again an invincible adherence to the proposition that in war there can be no substitute for victory.⁴¹

In spite of the weight which was attached to such views because of MacArthur's tremendous prestige and popularity, the primary danger of a failure of civilian supremacy in national security policy formulation lies not in direct political intervention or confrontation by the

⁴⁰ Rovere and Schlesinger, op. cit., p. 315. Reprint of MacArthur's address before the Massachusetts Legislature in Boston, July 25, 1951.

⁴¹ Varin E. Whan, Jr. (ed.), A Soldier Speaks, Public Papers and Speeches of General of the Army, Douglas MacArthur (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1965), pp. 301-303. MacArthur's Founder's Day address at the Military Academy, March 14, 1953.

There has been some evidence to suggest that the
 of this argument were the two following statements by Gen-

and MacArthur:

"For example, I find it dangerous to have a new and un-
 to be unknown and dangerous concept that the powers
 of our armed forces are primarily military and largely
 to those who have not exercised the authority of
 the executive branch of government, rather than to
 the country and its Constitution which they are sworn
 to defend."

"No proposition could be more dangerous. None
 could cast greater doubt upon the integrity of the
 armed forces."

"We of the military shall always do what we are
 told to do, but if this nation is to survive, we
 must trust the soldier once our soldiers have failed
 to preserve the peace . . . We must provision again
 and again and again an inviolable adherence to the
 proposition that in war there can be no substitute
 for victory."

In spite of the weight which was attached to such
 views because of MacArthur's prominent position and popu-
 larity, the primary danger of a failure of civilian
 supremacy in national security policy formulation lies not
 in direct political intervention or confrontation by the

⁴⁰ See, for example, *op. cit.*, p. 111. Remarks
 of MacArthur's address before the Massachusetts Legislature
 in Boston, July 22, 1951.

⁴¹ *War in the Modern World*, p. 106. A similar theme, *Public
 Affairs and Speeches of General of the Army, Douglas Mac-
 Arthur* (New York: Praeger, 1951), p. 106. (1951)
 pp. 301-302. MacArthur's famous "D-Day address" to the
 Military Academy, March 14, 1951.

military but rather in the more subtle form of loss by forfeiture of authority and responsibility on the part of civilian leaders. This loss can be effected by failure to recognize the roles of the military in policy formulation, by fear of assuming responsibility for decisions contrary to military advice or recommendation, and the civilian leadership becoming "militarized."⁴²

The dilemma faced in the quest for civilian supremacy has undoubtedly affected the ability of both the civilian and military components of the national policy-making team in coping adequately with the complex problems of security. One example of the problem has been apparent in the organization aspects of policy formulation. Consistently, studies of military organizations have criticized the Joint Chiefs of Staff as inefficient and ineffective. Yet, attempts to correct these deficiencies have been opposed on the basis that it will lead to the development of a "Prussian-type general staff."⁴³

Even though much fear has been expressed of the expanded military role in national policy, domestic as well as foreign, all indications point to the fact that civilian

⁴²Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., pp. 55-56.

⁴³Ibid., p. 2.

... military but rather in the more capricious form of 1935 by the
 failure of authority and responsibility on the part of
 civilian leaders. This fact can be affected by failure to
 recognize the role of the military in policy formulation,
 by fear of assuming responsibility for decisions contrary
 to military advice or recommendations, and the civilian
 leadership becoming militarized.⁴²

The dilemma faced in the quest for civilian supremacy
 has undoubtedly affected the ability of both the civilian
 and military components of the national policy-making team
 in coping adequately with the complex problems of security.
 One example of the problem has been apparent in the process
 of policy formulation. Consistently, civilian
 military organizations have criticized the Joint Chiefs
 of Staff as inefficient and ineffective. Yet, attempts to
 correct these deficiencies have been opposed on the basis
 that it will lead to the development of a Prussian-type
 general staff.⁴³

Even though much has been expressed of the ex-
 tended military role in national policy, domestic as well
 as foreign, all indications point to the fact that civilian

⁴² Nathan and Myers, *The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy*, pp. 211-22.

⁴³ Ibid., p. 2.

supremacy is increasing rather than diminishing. This trend has been noted in the increasing scope of the Presidential Office at the top of the national defense organization,⁴⁴ in the increased powers of the Secretary of Defense,⁴⁵ by remarks of President Eisenhower,⁴⁶ and by the increased importance of other non-military departments and agencies in the policy-making process.

Robert A. Lovett, writing in 1962 for the benefit of the Special Preparedness Subcommittee of the Senate Committee on Armed Forces, exhibited the disdain which many experienced civilian leaders have for the fear of loss of civilian supremacy. He noted the irritation between military and civilian agencies which happens at times, but, on the specific subject of subordination to civilian control, he wrote:

Official and personal relations between the military and civilians . . . seem good, judging by the moderate number of times one reads that tired old story about "restoring civilian control." Alarmist cries about the lack of control over the

⁴⁴Timothy W. Stanley, American Defense and National Security (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1965), p. 16.

⁴⁵The increased powers of the Secretary of Defense are explicitly covered by the "National Security Act of 1947" and will be treated in detail in Chapter III.

⁴⁶News item in The New York Times, February 3, 1955. The President commented that the ultimate decision responsibility was his regardless of military views or concern relating to national policy.

importance is increasing rather than diminishing. This trend has been noted in the increasing scope of the Special Council at the top of the national defense organization, in the increased power of the Secretary of Defense, by creation of President Eisenhower, and by the increased importance of other non-military departments and agencies in the policy-making process.

Robert A. Lovett, writing in 1965 for the benefit of the Special Intelligence Subcommittee of the Senate Committee on Armed Forces, outlined the dilemma which may be experienced by the United States for the loss of civil control. He noted the friction between military and civilian agencies which happens at times, but in the specific subject of authorization to civilian control, he stated:

Civilian and military relations between the military and civilians . . . seem good, judged by the moderate number of times one hears that there is a story about "restoring civilian control." However, crises about the lack of control over the

⁴⁴Timothy A. Minchin, United States and National Security (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1967), p. 14.

⁴⁵The increased power of the Secretary of Defense was explicitly covered by the "National Security Act of 1947" and will be treated in detail in Chapter III.

⁴⁶How does it fit in the long term? February 2, 1957. The President commented that the alliance should be reformed. He was his responsibility of military views on domestic relating to national policy.

military, in our Nation, deal with a strawman issue. They are concerned with a problem which does not really exist, and they are divisive and damaging by falsely implying that the military does not accept our historic tradition of civilian supremacy. Nothing could be more wrong.⁴⁷

The preceding discussion was designed to provide an understanding of the nature of the societal atmosphere through which the military officer corps has been conditioned and in which it effectuates its influence. If the civilian-military attitudes and characteristics appear somewhat disordered, it is the result of the confusion in societal doctrine which has seen the emergence of militarized civilians and civilianized military.⁴⁸ As a result of this phenomenon, some scholars have seen fit to say:

It is quite possible that United States foreign policy could be overbalanced toward military objectives or the use of military techniques without this necessarily being a result of Military Establishment thinking or influence. It is interesting to note that oftentimes some members of Congress are more prone to argue for quick, military solutions of problems than the high ranking officers who testify before their committees.⁴⁹

⁴⁷ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected Papers, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1962), pp. 142-143.

⁴⁸ Gene M. Lyons, "The New Civil-Military Relations," Components of Defense Policy, ed. Davis B. Bobrow (Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1965), p. 113.

⁴⁹ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., p. 23.

... military, in our Nation, deal with a situation in which they are concerned with a problem which does not really exist, and they are mistaken and misleading in their implying that the military does not accept our historic tradition of civilian supremacy. Nothing could be more wrong.⁴⁷

The preceding discussion was designed to provide an

understanding of the nature of the societal phenomenon

through which the military system has been transformed

those and in which it reflected its influence. It is

civilian-military attitudes and characteristics appear

somewhat disordered, it is the result of the confusion in

societal doctrine which has seen the separation of military-

and civilian and civilian-military.⁴⁸ As a result of

this phenomenon, some scholars have seen fit to say

It is quite possible that before long foreign policy would be overwhelmingly based on military considerations on the use of military techniques without this necessarily being a result of military leadership thinking or influence. It is interesting to note that attention has been given to concepts are now given to argue for quick, efficient, efficient or problems than the high ranking officials who really before their counterparts.⁴⁹

⁴⁷ United States House of Representatives, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected Issues, Report by the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 87th Cong., 1st Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961), pp. 142-143.

⁴⁸ Carl A. Brown, The New Civil-Military Relations: Components of National Policy, ed. David B. Brown (Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1963), p. 111.

⁴⁹ Legis and Admin. Aspects of the Military in American Society, pp. 212, 213.

Regardless of conditioning factors, the fact remains that, prior to World War II, the influence of the military in national policy formulation was negligible. Subsequent discussion will be directed toward those factors which caused military influence or presence to generate concern, rightly or not, for its control.

II. POSTWAR PERSPECTIVES AND NEW MILITARY HORIZONS

Fortunately, from the viewpoint of the researcher, very little controversy surrounds the reasons why military activity and influence increased in the formulation and implementation of national security policy since the end of World War II. These reasons can be summarized as follows: The United States recognized the need to assume a major role in world politics and this role involved a substantial and continuing threat to the nation's military security; the traditional importance of military weaponry was increased manifold by revolutionary advances in the technology of war; and the interdependence of military and political policy required greater concern for policy coordination.⁵⁰

⁵⁰ Sapin et al., An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note, op. cit., p. 1.

separation of controlling factors, the fact remains that, prior to 1914, the influence of the military in national policy formulation was negligible. Independent discussion will be directed toward those factors which caused military influence to increase in greater measure, slightly or not, for the world.

II. NATIONAL RESPONSIBILITIES AND THE

MILITARY FACTORS

Fortunately, from the viewpoint of the researcher, very little controversy surrounds the regard for military activity and influence increased in the twentieth century and the phenomenon of national military policy since the end of World War II. These trends can be summarized as follows: The United States recognized the need to attain a major role in world politics and this role involved a substantial and continuing threat to the nation's military security; the traditional importance of military weapons was increased by revolutionary advances in the technology of war; and the interdependence of military and political policy required greater concern for policy coordination.

20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546
 547
 548
 549
 550
 551
 552
 553
 554
 555
 556
 557
 558
 559
 560
 561
 562
 563
 564
 565
 566
 567
 568
 569
 570
 571
 572
 573
 574
 575
 576
 577
 578
 579
 580
 581
 582
 583
 584
 585
 586
 587
 588
 589
 590
 591
 592
 593
 594
 595
 596
 597
 598
 599
 600
 601
 602
 603
 604
 605
 606
 607
 608
 609
 610
 611
 612
 613
 614
 615
 616
 617
 618
 619
 620
 621
 622
 623
 624
 625
 626
 627
 628
 629
 630
 631
 632
 633
 634
 635
 636
 637
 638
 639
 640
 641
 642
 643
 644
 645
 646
 647
 648
 649
 650
 651
 652
 653
 654
 655
 656
 657
 658
 659
 660
 661
 662
 663
 664
 665
 666
 667
 668
 669
 670
 671
 672
 673
 674
 675
 676
 677
 678
 679
 680
 681
 682
 683
 684
 685
 686
 687
 688
 689
 690
 691
 692
 693
 694
 695
 696
 697
 698
 699
 700
 701
 702
 703
 704
 705
 706
 707
 708
 709
 710
 711
 712
 713
 714
 715
 716
 717
 718
 719
 720
 721
 722
 723
 724
 725
 726
 727
 728
 729
 730
 731
 732
 733
 734
 735
 736
 737
 738
 739
 740
 741
 742
 743
 744
 745
 746
 747
 748
 749
 750
 751
 752
 753
 754
 755
 756
 757
 758
 759
 760
 761
 762
 763
 764
 765
 766
 767
 768
 769
 770
 771
 772
 773
 774
 775
 776
 777
 778
 779
 780
 781
 782
 783
 784
 785
 786
 787
 788
 789
 790
 791
 792
 793
 794
 795
 796
 797
 798
 799
 800
 801
 802
 803
 804
 805
 806
 807
 808
 809
 810
 811
 812
 813
 814
 815
 816
 817
 818
 819
 820
 821
 822
 823
 824
 825
 826
 827
 828
 829
 830
 831
 832
 833
 834
 835
 836
 837
 838
 839
 840
 841
 842
 843
 844
 845
 846
 847
 848
 849
 850
 851
 852
 853
 854
 855
 856
 857
 858
 859
 860
 861
 862
 863
 864
 865
 866
 867
 868
 869
 870
 871
 872
 873
 874
 875
 876
 877
 878
 879
 880
 881
 882
 883
 884
 885
 886
 887
 888
 889
 890
 891
 892
 893
 894
 895
 896
 897
 898
 899
 900
 901
 902
 903
 904
 905
 906
 907
 908
 909
 910
 911
 912
 913
 914
 915
 916
 917
 918
 919
 920
 921
 922
 923
 924
 925
 926
 927
 928
 929
 930
 931
 932
 933
 934
 935
 936
 937
 938
 939
 940
 941
 942
 943
 944
 945
 946
 947
 948
 949
 950
 951
 952
 953
 954
 955
 956
 957
 958
 959
 960
 961
 962
 963
 964
 965
 966
 967
 968
 969
 970
 971
 972
 973
 974
 975
 976
 977
 978
 979
 980
 981
 982
 983
 984
 985
 986
 987
 988
 989
 990
 991
 992
 993
 994
 995
 996
 997
 998
 999
 1000

American World Position

At the termination of World War II, the United States was faced with the decision between withdrawing behind her traditional isolationism or taking an active part in world affairs. The latter course was determined to be necessary in the interest of the nation's security. Because of the war's effect, Europe and Asia were in a devastated condition and, therefore, the decision to take part in world affairs was, in effect, a decision to assume leadership of the free world in the struggle against communism.

The nature of the communist threat was both political and military. The policy chosen by the United States was to deter further Soviet expansion in any area of the world with primary emphasis being placed on Europe. The accomplishment of this task was recognized as impossible on a unilateral basis and led to the alliance system which exists to the present. The alliance system had both economical and military significance. The economical aspects were exemplified by the Marshall Plan; however, there were military overtures running through all the economic programs. In some cases, economic aid was directly attached to military objectives, as in the Mutual Defense Assistance Act under which sixteen hundred shiploads of military equipment had been delivered to Europe by June, 1951. In other

American Policy Position

At the Commission of 1945 the United States was faced with the decision between withdrawing behind her traditional isolationism or taking an active part in world affairs. The latter course was dictated by the necessity in the interest of the nation's security, because of the war's effort, Europe and Asia were in a devastated condition and, therefore, the decision to take part in world affairs was, in effect, a decision to ensure leadership of the free world in the struggle against communism.

The nature of the communist threat was such that it could not be met by the policy chosen by the United States was to take further active participation in any area of the world with primary emphasis being placed on Europe. The accomplishment of this task was recognized as fundamental to a collateral basis and to the alliance system which exists to the present. The alliance system has been considered and military significance. The economic aspects were emphasized by the Marshall Plan program, which was military overtones running through all the economic programs. In some cases, economic aid was directly related to military objectives, as in the mutual defense assistance act under which various foreign countries of military weapons and have been delivered to Europe at home, 1945. In other

cases, such as the Marshall Plan, the pure economic aid was designed to return the participating nations' economies to a point where those nations could better support their own defense.⁵¹

The primary decision to expand the political role of the United States inevitably led to greater military influence in the nation's security policy. The ability of any nation to influence or effect change in the international environment must be, in the end, proportionate to its relative capabilities.⁵² Since the possibility or probability of armed conflict was an ever-present part of the "cold war," the military capability of the United States became an important, and at times the most significant, factor in American foreign policy. When General Marshall was Secretary of Defense, he emphatically denied that the military initiated foreign policy; but, at the same time, he admitted that the Joint Chiefs of Staff influenced foreign policy because they had to determine whether the armed forces could execute those policies proposed by the State Department. He further said that, when State Department

⁵¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, Mutual Security Act of 1952, Hearings, 82d Cong., 2d Sess., on S.3086, May 8-13, 1952 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1952), pp. 12, 35, 38, and 70.

⁵²Lerche, op. cit., p. 48.

seems, such as the Marshall Plan, the pure economic aid was designed to return the participating nations' economies to a point where these nations could better support their own defense.⁵¹

The primary decision to expand the political role of the United States inevitably led to greater military involvement in the nation's security policy. The ability of any nation to influence or effect change in the international environment must be, in the end, proportional to its military capabilities.⁵² Since the possibility of possibility

of armed conflict was an ever-present part of the "cold war," the military capability of the United States became as important, and at times the most significant, factor in American foreign policy. When General Marshall was Secretary of Defense, he emphatically stated that the military initiated foreign policy; but, at the same time, he admitted that the Joint Chiefs of Staff influenced foreign policy because they had to determine whether the armed

forces could execute those policies proposed by the State Department. He further said that, when State Department

⁵¹ United States Congress, House, Committee on Armed Services, Annual Report of 1953, Hearing, 83d Cong., 1st Sess., on S. 1000, May 8-13, 1953 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1953), pp. 12, 13, 14, and 15.

⁵² ibid., pp. 12, 13, 14, and 15.

proposals were made, the military checked to insure that they could implement the proposed policy without weakening our security posture or without placing the nation in a dangerous position in relation to potential enemies.⁵³

The expanded role of the military was not restricted to military capability analysis, a function recognized as within the purview of military expertise. The military became involved in political and economic problems which were directly and indirectly connected to military capabilities. Generals became military governors of Germany and Japan. Admirals initiated and negotiated treaties regarding bases in Spain and were active in intra-governmental negotiations concerning the status of islands captured from the Japanese in World War II. And the Pentagon actively opposed a unilateral peace treaty with Japan until 1950.⁵⁴

The assumption of a leading role in world affairs caused the blurring of foreign and domestic policy priorities and goals in the name of national survival. This led to increased military influence being felt in domestic policy. The choice open to decision makers in the determination of domestic policy was narrowed by the requirement

⁵³ U.S. News and World Report, April 13, 1951, p. 30.

⁵⁴ Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., pp. 33-34.

proposals were made, the military checked to insure that they would implement the proposed policy without weakness. The security posture of various places in the region is a dangerous position in relation to potential enemies.²³

The expanded role of the military was not restricted to military capability, but a broader concept as within the growth of military expenditure. The military became involved in political and economic problems which were directly and indirectly connected to military capability. General's became military governors of Germany and Japan. Admirals influenced and negotiated treaties regarding power in Spain and were active in Latin-American negotiations concerning the status of islands captured from the Japanese in World War II. And the Venetians actively opposed a unilateral peace treaty with Japan until 1952.²⁴

The assumption of a leading role in world affairs caused the shifting of foreign and domestic policy priorities and goals in the case of national survival. This led to increased military expenditure being felt in domestic policy. The choice open to decision makers in the development of domestic policy was narrowed by the requirement

²³ J. F. Jones and J. F. Jones, *World War II*, p. 30.

²⁴ Japan and the United States, *The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy*, pp. 21-22.

to maintain a strong military capability. The determination of military adequacy was and continues to be primarily the responsibility of military leadership. Therefore, the choice of weapons, manpower requirements, and supporting facilities affected the economic, political, and social life of the nation.

Technological Advancements

The technological revolution which followed World War II contributed to the increase of military influence in several ways. Quantum jumps in the development of weapons capable of mass destruction increased reliance on the experts who must use the weapons. At the same time, the costs of weapon production and increased expertise required for utilization place a greater burden on the national economy. The development of new weapons also complicated traditional tactical and strategic concepts because the effectiveness of the weapons and weapons systems had not been tested except under laboratory conditions. The latter point become especially significant when one realizes that national military strategy must be formulated on the basis of unproven weapons and their effects on the overall coordination of military weapons.⁵⁵

⁵⁵ Washington Center of Foreign Policy Research, "Developments in Military Technology and Their Impact on United States Strategy and Foreign Policy," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 116-122.

to maintain a strong military capability. The development of military capability was and continues to be primarily the responsibility of military leadership. Therefore, the choice of weapons, manpower requirements, and supporting facilities affects the economic, political, and social life of the nation.

Technological Advancements

The technological revolution which followed World War II contributed to the increase of military influence in several ways. Quarters judge in the development of weapons capable of mass destruction increased reliance on the experts who must use the weapons. At the same time, the costs of weapon production and increased expertise required for utilization place a greater burden on the national economy. The development of new weapons also complicated traditional tactical and strategic concepts because the effectiveness of the weapons and weapon systems had not been tested except under laboratory conditions. The latter point becomes especially significant when one realizes that national military strategy must be formulated on the basis of unknown weapons and their impact on the overall condition of military weapons.²²

²²Washington Council of Foreign Policy, "Investigations in Military Technology and Their Impact on United States Strategy and Foreign Policy," Washington Foreign Policy, op. cit., pp. 116-117.

While technological advancements, especially the balancing of nuclear weapons and delivery systems, have often been cited as destroying the validity of the concept of war as another political device, it appears that this phenomenon has not actually developed. The so-called "balance of terror" did not prevent the war in Korea, or Viet Nam. It has not worked to prevent the "wars of national liberation." Aside from the fact that it works to prevent an all-out general war by establishing a prohibitive cost/risk ratio on all states, the development of a nuclear stalemate would actually seem to encourage "bush" wars because it is in the national interest of the great powers to prevent general escalation. Under this concept, the cost/risk ratio improves in most underdeveloped nations, and those which have the least to gain from order and political stability become potential war zones. The military's influence in national policy has traditionally increased during periods of crisis; therefore, if one accepts the concept that mutual nuclear deterrence heightens world tensions and encourages limited war, an inevitable increase of military influence must be expected.

Policy Vacuum

The formulation of national security policy has always been a weak feature of the United States Government.

While technological advancements, especially the
 development of nuclear weapons and delivery systems, have
 often been cited as destroying the validity of the concept
 of war as a method of political action, it appears that this
 phenomenon has not actually developed. The so-called
 "balance of terror" did not prevent the war in Korea or
 Viet Nam. It has not seemed to prevent the wars of na-
 tional liberation. It is true that the fact that it would be
 prevent an all-out general war by establishing a prohibi-
 tive cost/benefit ratio on all sides, the development of a
 nuclear armaments would actually seem to encourage them.
 were because it is in the national interest of the great
 powers to prevent general escalation. Under this concept,
 the cost/benefit ratio improves in most underdeveloped regions,
 and those which have the least to gain from peace and
 political stability become potential war zones. The effec-
 tive influence in national policy has traditionally
 increased during periods of crisis; therefore, it can
 suggest the concept that mutual nuclear deterrence heightens
 world tensions and encourages limited war, an inevitable
 increase of military influence must be expected.

Policy Formulation

The formulation of national security policy has al-
 ways been a task for the United States Government.

This can be partly explained by the division of policy-making function between the executive and legislative branches,⁵⁶ by the pre-World War II concept of natural defense, by isolation, and by the lack of experience in world affairs.⁵⁷ Other explanations involve the characteristics of policy making in the democratic political system and the vast complexities of world politics.

Perhaps the best explanation of United States weakness in security policy stems from a combination of factors; however, the most obvious and direct cause of policy weakness following World War II stemmed from the fact that the State Department was not staffed nor oriented toward foreign policy based on United States world leadership. Huntington has pointed out that throughout World War II the Department of State "continued to believe that its function was diplomacy and that diplomacy was distinct from force."⁵⁸

The conservative role of the State Department during and after World War II may have been affected by the fact that the department lost many of its young officers to the military services. This, coupled with a policy of

⁵⁶ Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, op. cit., p. 140.

⁵⁷ Robert E. Osgood, "The American Approach to War," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 100, 106-107.

⁵⁸ Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., p. 321.

This can be partly explained by the Division of Policy-making function between the executive and legislative branches,²⁶ by the pre-war era of isolationism in world affairs,²⁷ and by the lack of homogeneity in world affairs.²⁸ Since world affairs involve the participation of policy makers in the democratic political system and can vary completely of world politics.

Further the best explanation of United States action in foreign policy seems to be a combination of factors; however, the most obvious and direct cause of policy action following world war II seemed from the fact that the State Department was not unified and divided power left after policy made on United States world leadership. Foreign policy was outlined out from throughout world war II the Department of State "continued to believe that its function was to keep the United States and Great Britain from losing their leadership and from becoming a distant power."²⁹

The conservative role of the State Department during and after world war II may have been affected by the fact that the department took many of its young officials to the military services. This, coupled with a policy of

²⁶Samuel H. Huntington, "Foreign Policy: The Executive and the Legislative Branches," *American Political Science Review*, 50: 225, 5-1955.

²⁷Robert H. Jackson, "The American Approach to War," *American Political Science Review*, 50: 215, 10-1955.

²⁸Huntington, *The Politics and the State*, 50: 215.

non-recruitment, left the department both understaffed and tradition oriented.⁵⁹ The prestige of the State Department was further depreciated by the security scandals in the postwar era, and this factor further weakened the department's ability to participate effectively in the policy-making process. Not only did security leaks make Congress reluctant to give strong support to the State Department, but it also became a negative factor in the recruitment of able personnel.⁶⁰

As the Russian threat became more apparent, policy makers turned more to the Department of Defense for advice and policy formulation. Additionally, in the attempt to rebuild the Foreign Service with the "Manpower Act of 1946," military personnel were recruited directly into the State Department.⁶¹ Thus, military influence increased because this element of the policy-making team was ready to fill the vacuum created by the lack of vigorous policy formulation within the State Department.

Part of the increase of military influence in foreign affairs was the result of the State Department's

⁵⁹ The American Assembly, The Representation of the United States Abroad (New York: Columbia University, 1956), p. 15.

⁶⁰ Stanley, op. cit., pp. 39-41.

⁶¹ The American Assembly, op. cit., pp. 16-17.

non-cooperation, but the department had anticipated and
 transition anticipated.⁵⁹ The passage of the State Department

was further accelerated by the security scandals in the
 postwar era, and this factor further weakened the depart-
 ment's ability to participate effectively in the policy-
 making process. Yet, as the security laws were Congress
 reluctant to give strong support to the State Department,
 but it also became a negative factor in the recruitment of
 this personnel.⁶⁰

In the postwar period, however, the department, policy
 makers turned away from the Department of Defense for advice
 and policy formulation. Additionally, in the attempt to
 rebuild the foreign service with the Foreign Act of 1946,⁶¹
 military personnel were recruited directly into the State
 Department.⁶² Thus, military influence increased because
 this element of the policy-making team was ready to fill
 the vacuum created by the lack of vigorous policy formula-
 tion within the State Department.

Part of the increase of military influence in for-
 eign affairs was the result of the State Department's

⁵⁹ The American Assembly, *The Internationalization of the*
United States (New York: Columbia University, 1952), p. 17.

⁶⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 35-41.

⁶¹ The American Assembly, *op. cit.*, pp. 14-15.

refusal to accept operational functions at the end of World War II. As an example, the Secretary of State, James F. Byrnes, resisted accepting operational responsibility for the occupation of Germany on the assumption that it would hinder the Department's ability to conduct foreign policy.⁶²

The lack of clear-cut and vigorous foreign policy also placed military commanders in the field in a significant position to affect the nation's security policy. Such cases as that concerning a China policy following the surrender of Japan were not uncommon in the postwar era. In the case of China, the issue was clouded by two weak and opposing policies in the State Department. In the hopes of making the correct decision, the policy makers asked General Wedemeyer to advise a course of action. The General replied that this was a problem which should be handled in the State Department, but he did offer his evaluation of the situation.⁶³ Another example of the lack of clear-cut policy and resultant military influence was reflected by the confusion which MacArthur's Formosan trip caused in Washington in late 1950. W. Averell Harriman was dispatched to Tokyo by the President to brief General MacArthur on American policy.⁶⁴ When one considers that the incident

⁶² Stanley, op. cit., p. 38.

⁶³ Millis, op. cit., pp. 110-111.

⁶⁴ Rovere, op. cit., pp. 126-127.

refusal to accept operational functions at the end of World War II, as an example, the Secretary of State, James F. Byrnes, refused accepted operational responsibilities for the occupation of Germany on the grounds that it would hinder the Department's ability to conduct foreign policy.⁸² The lack of clear-cut and distinct foreign policy also placed military commanders in the field in a difficult position to follow the nation's security policy. Such cases as that concerning a China policy following the surrender of Japan have not uncommon in the past and the case of China, the issue was clouded by the lack of opposing policies in the State Department. In the hope of ending the current situation, the policy makers should consider the need for a course of action. The current situation was a problem which should be handled in the State Department, but he did offer his evaluation of the situation.⁸³ Another example of the lack of clear-cut policy and military influence was reflected in the confusion which MacArthur's proposed policy caused in Washington in late 1951. As Soviet Russia was expected to Tokyo by the President to bring General MacArthur on American policy.⁸⁴ There was confusion over the incident.

⁸² Byrnes, pp. 215-216, 217.

⁸³ Byrnes, pp. 215-216, 217-218.

⁸⁴ Byrnes, pp. 215-216, 217-218.

reflected a case in which a general with broad military command, the Pacific theater, was not fully conversant with the objectives and goals of American national security policy, it must be conceded that, if clear-cut policy existed, those with a need to know were being excluded from the policy dissemination process.

III. INTERDEPENDENCE OF NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY AND MILITARY POLICY

In the preceding discussion, the interdependence of national security policy and military policy has been implied or stated on many occasions. Yet, the actual significance of this interdependence to an expanding military influence in security policy has not been directly related. There would be little concern for a wider military role in national security policy if the fear did not exist that such a role would have a detrimental effect on the overall security of the United States and its form of democratic government. Those who share the concern of militarization of national policy project its effects on national goals and interests and reject the idea that the military should participate in the security policy process beyond advising policy makers in purely military matters.

Wide Policy Implications

Hardly any political action can be contemplated

reflected a case in which a general idea about military command, the Pacific theater, was not fully conversant with the objectives and basis of American national security policy, it must be conceded that, in general, the policy extended, those with a view to how they were related to the policy dissemination process.

THE THREATS TO NATIONAL SECURITY

SECURITY AND MILITARY POLICY

In the preceding discussion, the relationship of national security policy and military policy was implied or stated on many occasions. Yet, the general significance of this relationship as an organizing principle in security policy has not been directly stated. There would be little concern for a mixed military role in national security policy if the two did not relate in such a way as to have a substantial effect on the overall security of the United States and its role in democratic government. Those who stress the concept of militarization of national policy recognize the effects on national goals and interests and policy. The idea that the military should participate in the security policy process is based on the belief that policy must be based on military matters.

Side Policy Considerations

Finally, any political action can be considered

without careful analysis of its effect on national security. This is especially significant when world politics are involved, but since World War II, broad domestic political actions have required the same careful evaluation. Because the military occupy key positions in the direct or indirect implementation of foreign policy, most policy proposals must be carefully coordinated between the Departments of State and Defense.

The coordination of security policy and military policy has not been a traditional aspect of American Government. In a memorandum to President Roosevelt in 1937, Assistant Secretary of War Louis Johnson decried the lack of coordination when he wrote:

I find this action of the State Department, in ignoring military advice, has been characteristic of its attitude for many years past. My investigation discloses that this is an attitude not assumed by the foreign office of any other nation. On the contrary, none embarks upon foreign policy having any military implications without giving the fullest consideration to the advice of the responsible military authorities. May I respectfully ask that you consider directing the Secretary of State to afford an opportunity to the War Department to express its views upon all matters having a military implication, immediate or remote.⁶⁵

⁶⁵United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., June 25, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 553.

without careful analysis of its effect on national security. This is especially significant when world politics are involved, and since world war II, broad domestic political actions have required the same careful evaluation. Because the military society has influence in the sphere of national implementation of foreign policy, more policy proposals must be carefully considered between the departments of State and Defense.

The coordination of security policy and military policy has not been a traditional aspect of American government. In a memorandum to President Roosevelt in 1917, Assistant Secretary of War Louis Johnson declared the lack of coordination when he wrote:

I find this action of the State Department, in ignoring military advice, was very characteristic of the attitude for many years past. My investigation discloses that this is an attitude not shared by the foreign office of any other nation. On the contrary, most nations upon foreign policy having any military implications without giving the military cooperation to the advice of the responsible military authorities. I am respectfully asking you consider directing the Secretary of State to afford an opportunity to the War Department to express its views upon all matters having a military implication, immediately at hand.

Office of the Assistant Secretary of War, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security Affairs and Operations, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., June 25, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 522.

The coordination of national security policy became absolutely necessary in the postwar era, and the process of policy coordination must be recognized as one means through which military influence has increased. The process of coordination implies consultation and cooperation; therefore, the military voice became known in councils which had been closed previously. The best-known council for coordination of security policy open to the military influence has been the National Security Council. While not a participating member, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff was accorded the right to sit in on all sessions in an advisory capacity and indirect participation of the military was assured by the membership of the Secretary of Defense.

When President Eisenhower determined that an additional organization was necessary to coordinate security policy, he initiated the National Security Council Planning Board. Here again, military representation was effected through assignment of the Office of the Joint Chiefs of Staff as advisers.⁶⁶

⁶⁶United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Organizing for National Security: Selected Materials, prepared for the Committee on Government Operations and its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 86th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960), pp. 11-13.

The necessity of having security policy made absolutely necessary in the present era, and the process of policy coordination was emphasized in the same way, which military influence was discussed. The process of coordination involves consultation and cooperation between the military and other agencies in which it has been claimed previously. The fact that the Commission of Security Policy was in the military influence was the National Security Council, which is a permanent member, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and the right to sit in on all sessions in the military capacity and indirect participation of the military was assured by the membership of the Secretary of Defense. The President's Commission on Security Policy was established in 1947. National organizations are necessary to coordinate security policy, as indicated by the National Security Council. Through the military, communication was assured through assignment of the Chief of the Joint Chiefs of Staff as follows.

United States Government, National Commission on Government Operations, Organized for National Security, Selected Reports, prepared for the Commission on Government Operations and its subcommittee on national security, 1948-1949, in two volumes, Committee on National Security, Government Printing Office, 1949, pp. 11-12.

The Military Assistance Program of 1949 increased the scope of military activity abroad. While the overall control of the program was assigned to the Ambassador in the affected country, the actual direction of the program was the function of a senior military officer who was also to act as an adviser to the ambassador. This program also saw the assignment of military personnel to overseas posts to advise foreign military staffs in initiating and developing requests for aid, training in the use of newly-acquired United States military equipment, and observing the end use of aid. In the political area, military officers were charged:

1. To advise the U.S. Ambassador on special political considerations involved in MAP matters.
2. To make political analysis and to report on such matters of political implication relating to MAP.
3. To assist in the developing of country requests for aid by reviewing and advising from the political point of view.⁶⁷

The military received representation in the functioning of the Economics Cooperation Administration because it was responsible for proper administration of military end items and for coordinating the military aspects of production

⁶⁷ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, The Ambassador and the Problem of Coordination: A Study, Submitted by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 1st Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963), pp. 53-54.

The military assistance program of 1945 introduced the scope of military activities abroad. While the overall control of the program was assigned to the Department in the attached country, the actual direction of the program was the function of a senior military officer who also acted as an adviser to the ambassador. This program also saw the assignment of military personnel to various posts to advise foreign military staffs in training and development for aid, training in the use of army equipment, United States military equipment, and maintaining the use of aid. On the political area, military officers were

assigned:

1. To advise the military administration on special political considerations involved in aid matters.
2. To make political analysis and to report on such matters of political importance relating to aid.
3. To assist in the development of country programs for aid by reviewing and advising from the political point of view.

The military received representation in the function of the National Government Administration because it was responsible for the administration of military and naval and the coordinating the military aspects of economic

¹United States Department of Defense, Committee on Government Reorganization, The Department and the Program of Coordination, 3 June, 1945, included by the Committee on National Security Planning and Research, 20 May, 1945, 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th, 14th, 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 20th, 21st, 22nd, 23rd, 24th, 25th, 26th, 27th, 28th, 29th, 30th, 31st, 32nd, 33rd, 34th, 35th, 36th, 37th, 38th, 39th, 40th, 41st, 42nd, 43rd, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th, 48th, 49th, 50th, 51st, 52nd, 53rd, 54th, 55th, 56th, 57th, 58th, 59th, 60th, 61st, 62nd, 63rd, 64th, 65th, 66th, 67th, 68th, 69th, 70th, 71st, 72nd, 73rd, 74th, 75th, 76th, 77th, 78th, 79th, 80th, 81st, 82nd, 83rd, 84th, 85th, 86th, 87th, 88th, 89th, 90th, 91st, 92nd, 93rd, 94th, 95th, 96th, 97th, 98th, 99th, 100th, 101st, 102nd, 103rd, 104th, 105th, 106th, 107th, 108th, 109th, 110th, 111th, 112th, 113th, 114th, 115th, 116th, 117th, 118th, 119th, 120th, 121st, 122nd, 123rd, 124th, 125th, 126th, 127th, 128th, 129th, 130th, 131st, 132nd, 133rd, 134th, 135th, 136th, 137th, 138th, 139th, 140th, 141st, 142nd, 143rd, 144th, 145th, 146th, 147th, 148th, 149th, 150th, 151st, 152nd, 153rd, 154th, 155th, 156th, 157th, 158th, 159th, 160th, 161st, 162nd, 163rd, 164th, 165th, 166th, 167th, 168th, 169th, 170th, 171st, 172nd, 173rd, 174th, 175th, 176th, 177th, 178th, 179th, 180th, 181st, 182nd, 183rd, 184th, 185th, 186th, 187th, 188th, 189th, 190th, 191st, 192nd, 193rd, 194th, 195th, 196th, 197th, 198th, 199th, 200th, 201st, 202nd, 203rd, 204th, 205th, 206th, 207th, 208th, 209th, 210th, 211th, 212th, 213th, 214th, 215th, 216th, 217th, 218th, 219th, 220th, 221st, 222nd, 223rd, 224th, 225th, 226th, 227th, 228th, 229th, 230th, 231st, 232nd, 233rd, 234th, 235th, 236th, 237th, 238th, 239th, 240th, 241st, 242nd, 243rd, 244th, 245th, 246th, 247th, 248th, 249th, 250th, 251st, 252nd, 253rd, 254th, 255th, 256th, 257th, 258th, 259th, 260th, 261st, 262nd, 263rd, 264th, 265th, 266th, 267th, 268th, 269th, 270th, 271st, 272nd, 273rd, 274th, 275th, 276th, 277th, 278th, 279th, 280th, 281st, 282nd, 283rd, 284th, 285th, 286th, 287th, 288th, 289th, 290th, 291st, 292nd, 293rd, 294th, 295th, 296th, 297th, 298th, 299th, 300th, 301st, 302nd, 303rd, 304th, 305th, 306th, 307th, 308th, 309th, 310th, 311th, 312th, 313th, 314th, 315th, 316th, 317th, 318th, 319th, 320th, 321st, 322nd, 323rd, 324th, 325th, 326th, 327th, 328th, 329th, 330th, 331st, 332nd, 333rd, 334th, 335th, 336th, 337th, 338th, 339th, 340th, 341st, 342nd, 343rd, 344th, 345th, 346th, 347th, 348th, 349th, 350th, 351st, 352nd, 353rd, 354th, 355th, 356th, 357th, 358th, 359th, 360th, 361st, 362nd, 363rd, 364th, 365th, 366th, 367th, 368th, 369th, 370th, 371st, 372nd, 373rd, 374th, 375th, 376th, 377th, 378th, 379th, 380th, 381st, 382nd, 383rd, 384th, 385th, 386th, 387th, 388th, 389th, 390th, 391st, 392nd, 393rd, 394th, 395th, 396th, 397th, 398th, 399th, 400th, 401st, 402nd, 403rd, 404th, 405th, 406th, 407th, 408th, 409th, 410th, 411th, 412th, 413th, 414th, 415th, 416th, 417th, 418th, 419th, 420th, 421st, 422nd, 423rd, 424th, 425th, 426th, 427th, 428th, 429th, 430th, 431st, 432nd, 433rd, 434th, 435th, 436th, 437th, 438th, 439th, 440th, 441st, 442nd, 443rd, 444th, 445th, 446th, 447th, 448th, 449th, 450th, 451st, 452nd, 453rd, 454th, 455th, 456th, 457th, 458th, 459th, 460th, 461st, 462nd, 463rd, 464th, 465th, 466th, 467th, 468th, 469th, 470th, 471st, 472nd, 473rd, 474th, 475th, 476th, 477th, 478th, 479th, 480th, 481st, 482nd, 483rd, 484th, 485th, 486th, 487th, 488th, 489th, 490th, 491st, 492nd, 493rd, 494th, 495th, 496th, 497th, 498th, 499th, 500th, 501st, 502nd, 503rd, 504th, 505th, 506th, 507th, 508th, 509th, 510th, 511th, 512th, 513th, 514th, 515th, 516th, 517th, 518th, 519th, 520th, 521st, 522nd, 523rd, 524th, 525th, 526th, 527th, 528th, 529th, 530th, 531st, 532nd, 533rd, 534th, 535th, 536th, 537th, 538th, 539th, 540th, 541st, 542nd, 543rd, 544th, 545th, 546th, 547th, 548th, 549th, 550th, 551st, 552nd, 553rd, 554th, 555th, 556th, 557th, 558th, 559th, 560th, 561st, 562nd, 563rd, 564th, 565th, 566th, 567th, 568th, 569th, 570th, 571st, 572nd, 573rd, 574th, 575th, 576th, 577th, 578th, 579th, 580th, 581st, 582nd, 583rd, 584th, 585th, 586th, 587th, 588th, 589th, 590th, 591st, 592nd, 593rd, 594th, 595th, 596th, 597th, 598th, 599th, 600th, 601st, 602nd, 603rd, 604th, 605th, 606th, 607th, 608th, 609th, 610th, 611th, 612th, 613th, 614th, 615th, 616th, 617th, 618th, 619th, 620th, 621st, 622nd, 623rd, 624th, 625th, 626th, 627th, 628th, 629th, 630th, 631st, 632nd, 633rd, 634th, 635th, 636th, 637th, 638th, 639th, 640th, 641st, 642nd, 643rd, 644th, 645th, 646th, 647th, 648th, 649th, 650th, 651st, 652nd, 653rd, 654th, 655th, 656th, 657th, 658th, 659th, 660th, 661st, 662nd, 663rd, 664th, 665th, 666th, 667th, 668th, 669th, 670th, 671st, 672nd, 673rd, 674th, 675th, 676th, 677th, 678th, 679th, 680th, 681st, 682nd, 683rd, 684th, 685th, 686th, 687th, 688th, 689th, 690th, 691st, 692nd, 693rd, 694th, 695th, 696th, 697th, 698th, 699th, 700th, 701st, 702nd, 703rd, 704th, 705th, 706th, 707th, 708th, 709th, 710th, 711th, 712th, 713th, 714th, 715th, 716th, 717th, 718th, 719th, 720th, 721st, 722nd, 723rd, 724th, 725th, 726th, 727th, 728th, 729th, 730th, 731st, 732nd, 733rd, 734th, 735th, 736th, 737th, 738th, 739th, 740th, 741st, 742nd, 743rd, 744th, 745th, 746th, 747th, 748th, 749th, 750th, 751st, 752nd, 753rd, 754th, 755th, 756th, 757th, 758th, 759th, 760th, 761st, 762nd, 763rd, 764th, 765th, 766th, 767th, 768th, 769th, 770th, 771st, 772nd, 773rd, 774th, 775th, 776th, 777th, 778th, 779th, 780th, 781st, 782nd, 783rd, 784th, 785th, 786th, 787th, 788th, 789th, 790th, 791st, 792nd, 793rd, 794th, 795th, 796th, 797th, 798th, 799th, 800th, 801st, 802nd, 803rd, 804th, 805th, 806th, 807th, 808th, 809th, 810th, 811th, 812th, 813th, 814th, 815th, 816th, 817th, 818th, 819th, 820th, 821st, 822nd, 823rd, 824th, 825th, 826th, 827th, 828th, 829th, 830th, 831st, 832nd, 833rd, 834th, 835th, 836th, 837th, 838th, 839th, 840th, 841st, 842nd, 843rd, 844th, 845th, 846th, 847th, 848th, 849th, 850th, 851st, 852nd, 853rd, 854th, 855th, 856th, 857th, 858th, 859th, 860th, 861st, 862nd, 863rd, 864th, 865th, 866th, 867th, 868th, 869th, 870th, 871st, 872nd, 873rd, 874th, 875th, 876th, 877th, 878th, 879th, 880th, 881st, 882nd, 883rd, 884th, 885th, 886th, 887th, 888th, 889th, 890th, 891st, 892nd, 893rd, 894th, 895th, 896th, 897th, 898th, 899th, 900th, 901st, 902nd, 903rd, 904th, 905th, 906th, 907th, 908th, 909th, 910th, 911th, 912th, 913th, 914th, 915th, 916th, 917th, 918th, 919th, 920th, 921st, 922nd, 923rd, 924th, 925th, 926th, 927th, 928th, 929th, 930th, 931st, 932nd, 933rd, 934th, 935th, 936th, 937th, 938th, 939th, 940th, 941st, 942nd, 943rd, 944th, 945th, 946th, 947th, 948th, 949th, 950th, 951st, 952nd, 953rd, 954th, 955th, 956th, 957th, 958th, 959th, 960th, 961st, 962nd, 963rd, 964th, 965th, 966th, 967th, 968th, 969th, 970th, 971st, 972nd, 973rd, 974th, 975th, 976th, 977th, 978th, 979th, 980th, 981st, 982nd, 983rd, 984th, 985th, 986th, 987th, 988th, 989th, 990th, 991st, 992nd, 993rd, 994th, 995th, 996th, 997th, 998th, 999th, 1000th, 1001st, 1002nd, 1003rd, 1004th, 1005th, 1006th, 1007th, 1008th, 1009th, 1010th, 1011th, 1012th, 1013th, 1014th, 1015th, 1016th, 1017th, 1018th, 1019th, 1020th, 1021st, 1022nd, 1023rd, 1024th, 1025th, 1026th, 1027th, 1028th, 1029th, 1030th, 1031st, 1032nd, 1033rd, 1034th, 1035th, 1036th, 1037th, 1038th, 1039th, 1040th, 1041st, 1042nd, 1043rd, 1044th, 1045th, 1046th, 1047th, 1048th, 1049th, 1050th, 1051st, 1052nd, 1053rd, 1054th, 1055th, 1056th, 1057th, 1058th, 1059th, 1060th, 1061st, 1062nd, 1063rd, 1064th, 1065th, 1066th, 1067th, 1068th, 1069th, 1070th, 1071st, 1072nd, 1073rd, 1074th, 1075th, 1076th, 1077th, 1078th, 1079th, 1080th, 1081st, 1082nd, 1083rd, 1084th, 1085th, 1086th, 1087th, 1088th, 1089th, 1090th, 1091st, 1092nd, 1093rd, 1094th, 1095th, 1096th, 1097th, 1098th, 1099th, 1100th, 1101st, 1102nd, 1103rd, 1104th, 1105th, 1106th, 1107th, 1108th, 1109th, 1110th, 1111th, 1112th, 1113th, 1114th, 1115th, 1116th, 1117th, 1118th, 1119th, 1120th, 1121st, 1122nd, 1123rd, 1124th, 1125th, 1126th, 1127th, 1128th, 1129th, 1130th, 1131st, 1132nd, 1133rd, 1134th, 1135th, 1136th, 1137th, 1138th, 1139th, 1140th, 1141st, 1142nd, 1143rd, 1144th, 1145th, 1146th, 1147th, 1148th, 1149th, 1150th, 1151st, 1152nd, 1153rd, 1154th, 1155th, 1156th, 1157th, 1158th, 1159th, 1160th, 1161st, 1162nd, 1163rd, 1164th, 1165th, 1166th, 1167th, 1168th, 1169th, 1170th, 1171st, 1172nd, 1173rd, 1174th, 1175th, 1176th, 1177th, 1178th, 1179th, 1180th, 1181st, 1182nd, 1183rd, 1184th, 1185th, 1186th, 1187th, 1188th, 1189th, 1190th, 1191st, 1192nd, 1193rd, 1194th, 1195th, 1196th, 1197th, 1198th, 1199th, 1200th, 1201st, 1202nd, 1203rd, 1204th, 1205th, 1206th, 1207th, 1208th, 1209th, 1210th, 1211st, 1212nd, 1213rd, 1214th, 1215th, 1216th, 1217th, 1218th, 1219th, 1220th, 1221st, 1222nd, 1223rd, 1224th, 1225th, 1226th, 1227th, 1228th, 1229th, 1230th, 1231st, 1232nd, 1233rd, 1234th, 1235th, 1236th, 1237th, 1238th, 1239th, 1240th, 1241st, 1242nd, 1243rd, 1244th, 1245th, 1246th, 1247th, 1248th, 1249th, 1250th, 1251st, 1252nd, 1253rd, 1254th, 1255th, 1256th, 1257th, 1258th, 1259th, 1260th, 1261st, 1262nd, 1263rd, 1264th, 1265th, 1266th, 1267th, 1268th, 1269th, 1270th, 1271st, 1272nd, 1273rd, 1274th, 1275th, 1276th, 1277th, 1278th, 1279th, 1280th, 1281st, 1282nd, 1283rd, 1284th, 1285th, 1286th, 1287th, 1288th, 1289th, 1290th, 1291st, 1292nd, 1293rd, 1294th, 1295th, 1296th, 1297th, 1298th, 1299th, 1300th, 1301st, 1302nd, 1303rd, 1304th, 1305th, 1306th, 1307th, 1308th, 1309th, 1310th, 1311st, 1312nd, 1313rd, 1314th, 1315th, 1316th, 1317th, 1318th, 1319th, 1320th, 1321st, 1322nd, 1323rd, 1324th, 1325th, 1326th, 1327th, 1328th, 1329th, 1330th, 1331st, 1332nd, 1333rd, 1334th, 1335th, 1336th, 1337th, 1338th, 1339th, 1340th, 1341st, 1342nd, 1343rd, 1344th, 1345th, 1346th, 1347th, 1348th, 1349th, 1350th, 1351st, 1352nd, 1353rd, 1354th, 1355th, 1356th, 1357th, 1358th, 1359th, 1360th, 1361st, 1362nd, 1363rd, 1364th, 1365th, 1366th, 1367th, 1368th, 1369th, 1370th, 1371st, 1372nd, 1373rd, 1374th, 1375th, 1376th, 1377th, 1378th, 1379th, 1380th, 1381st, 1382nd, 1383rd, 1384th, 1385th, 1386th, 1387th, 1388th, 1389th, 1390th, 1391st, 1392nd, 1393rd, 1394th, 1395th, 1396th, 1397th, 1398th, 1399th, 1400th, 1401st, 1402nd, 1403rd, 1404th, 1405th, 1406th, 1407th, 1408th, 1409th, 1410th, 1411st, 1412nd, 1413rd, 1414th, 1415th, 1416th, 1417th, 1418th, 1419th, 1420th, 1421st, 1422nd, 1423rd, 1424th, 1425th, 1426th, 1427th, 1428th, 1429th, 1430th, 1431st, 1432nd, 1433rd, 1434th, 1435th, 1436th, 1437th, 1438th, 1439th, 1440th, 1441st, 1442nd, 1443rd, 1444th, 1445th, 1446th, 1447th, 1448th, 1449th, 1450th, 1451st, 1452nd, 1453rd, 1454th, 1455th, 1456th, 1457th, 1458th, 1459th, 1460th, 1461st, 1462nd, 1463rd, 1464th, 1465th, 1466th, 1467th, 1468th, 1469th, 1470th, 1471st, 1472nd, 1473rd, 1474th, 1475th, 1476th, 1477th, 1478th, 1479th, 1480th, 1481st, 1482nd, 1483rd, 1484th, 1485th, 1486th, 1487th, 1488th, 1489th, 1490th, 1491st, 1492nd, 1493rd, 1494th, 1495th, 1496th, 1497th, 1498th, 1499th, 1500th, 1501st, 1502nd, 1503rd, 1504th, 1505th, 1506th, 1507th, 1508th, 1509th, 1510th, 1511st, 1512nd, 1513rd, 1514th, 1515th, 1516th, 1517th, 1518th, 1519th, 1520th, 1521st, 1522nd, 1523rd, 1524th, 1525th, 1526th, 1527th, 1528th, 1529th, 1530th, 1531st, 1532nd, 1533rd, 1534th, 1535th, 1536th, 1537th, 1538th, 1539th, 1540th, 1541st, 1542nd, 1543rd, 1544th, 1545th, 1546th, 1547th, 1548th, 1549th, 1550th, 1551st, 1552nd, 1553rd, 1554th, 1555th, 1556th, 1557th, 1558th, 1559th, 1560th, 1561st, 1562nd, 1563rd, 1564th, 1565th, 1566th, 1567th, 1568th, 1569th, 1570th, 1571st, 1572nd, 1573rd, 1574th, 1575th, 1576th, 1577th, 1578th, 1579th, 1580th, 1581st, 1582nd, 1583rd, 1584th, 1585th, 1586th, 1587th, 1588th, 1589th, 1590th, 1591st, 1592nd, 1593rd, 1594th, 1595th, 1596th, 1597th, 1598th, 1599th, 1600th, 1601st, 1602nd, 1603rd, 1604th, 1605th, 1606th, 1607th, 1608th, 1609th, 1610th, 1611st, 1612nd, 1613rd, 1614th, 1615th, 1616th, 1617th, 1618th, 1619th, 1620th, 1621st, 1622nd, 1623rd, 1624th, 1625th, 1626th, 1627th, 1628th, 1629th, 1630th, 1631st, 1632nd, 1633rd, 1634th, 1635th, 1636th, 1637th, 1638th, 1639th, 1640th, 1641st, 1642nd, 1643rd, 1644th, 1645th, 1646th, 1647th, 1648th, 1649th, 1650th, 1651st, 1652nd, 1653rd, 1654th, 1655th, 1656th, 1657th, 1658th, 1659th, 1660th, 1661st, 1662nd, 1663rd, 1664th, 1665th, 1666th, 1667th, 1668th, 1669th, 1670th, 1671st, 1672nd, 1673rd, 1674th, 1675th, 1676th, 1677th, 1678th, 1679th, 1680th, 1681st, 1682nd, 1683rd, 1684th, 1685th, 1686th, 1687th, 1688th, 1689th, 1690th, 1691st, 1692nd, 1693rd, 1694th, 1695th, 1696th, 1697th, 1698th, 1699th, 1700th, 1701st, 1702nd, 1703rd, 1704th, 1705th, 1706th, 1707th, 1708th, 1709th, 1710th, 1711st, 1712nd, 1713rd, 1714th, 1715th, 1716th, 1717th, 1718th, 1719th, 1720th, 1721st, 1722nd, 1723rd, 1724th, 1725th, 1726th, 1727th, 1728th, 1729th, 1730th, 1731st, 1732nd, 1733rd, 1734th, 1735th, 1736th, 1737th, 1738th, 1739th, 1740th, 1741st, 1742nd, 1743rd, 1744th, 1745th, 1746th, 1747th, 1748th, 1749th, 1750th, 1751st, 1752nd, 1753rd, 1754th, 1755th, 1756th, 1757th, 1758th, 1759th, 1760th, 1761st, 1762nd, 1763rd, 1764th, 1765th, 1766th, 1767th, 1768th, 1769th, 1770th, 1771st, 1772nd, 1773rd, 1774th, 1775th, 1776th, 1777th, 1778th, 1779th, 1780th, 1781st, 1782nd, 1783rd, 1784th, 1785th, 1786th, 1787th, 1788th, 1789th, 1790th, 1791st, 1792nd, 1793rd, 1794th, 1795th, 1796th, 1797th, 1798th, 1799th, 1800th, 1801st, 1802nd, 1803rd, 1804th, 1805th, 1806th, 1807th, 1808th, 1809th, 1810th, 1811st, 1812nd, 1813rd, 1814th, 1815th, 1816th, 1817th, 1818th, 1819th, 1820th, 1821st, 1822nd, 1823rd, 1824th, 1825th, 1826th, 1827th, 1828th, 1829th, 1830th, 1831st, 1832nd, 1833rd, 1834th, 1835th, 1836th, 1837th, 1838th, 1839th, 1840th, 1841st, 1842nd, 1843rd, 1844th, 1845th, 1846th, 1847th, 1848th, 1849th, 1850th, 1851st, 1852nd, 1853rd, 1854th, 1855th, 1856th,

programs in foreign countries. This representation and responsibility were formalized in 1951 by a joint memorandum of understanding between the Departments of State and Defense and the Economic Cooperation Administration.⁶⁸

The Brookings Institution, in a report prepared for the Bureau of the Budget in 1951, found that the number of civilians working for military agencies overseas had increased from 500 in 1939 to the staggering sum of 51,204 by 1950. At the same time, the total number of civilians employed by 18 other government agencies had increased from 4,500 to 23,675.⁶⁹ The number of civilians employed by military agencies was primarily a reflection of the vast number of American troops maintained in Europe. But it must be recognized that military commanders of these troops had an active influence role in the implementation of security if not in its formulation.

These were only a few of the developments following World War II which required a greater degree of coordination for the planning and implementation of defense policy. Other significant areas included the establishment of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization, the Organization of American States, the Disarmament Commission, the Atomic

⁶⁸ Ibid., pp. 59-61.

⁶⁹ Ibid., pp. 78-79.

Defense and the Economic Development Administration.
one of outstanding figures in the Department of State and
responsibility was assumed in 1953 by a joint committee
program in foreign countries. This representation was

security is not in the formulation of
and an active role in the implementation of
must be recognized that military operations of these troops
number of Russian troops stationed in Europe. It is
military operations was previously a reflection of the fact
4,300 to 14,000.⁸⁰ The number of divisions required is
employed by 18 other government agencies has increased from
1980. At the same time, the total number of divisions
increased from 200 in 1975 to the beginning of the 1980s by
civilian workers for military operations systems and in-
the number of the budget in 1971, found that the number of
The Economic Institute, in a report to Congress for

Investigative, the Disarmament Commission, and the
North Atlantic Treaty Organization, the Organization of
Other Disarmament Areas includes the achievement of the
aims for the planning and implementation of disarmament
work in the light of a general review of disarmament
issues, such as the role of the disarmament commission

Energy Commission, and many other agencies through which the military increased their influence in national security policy either through direct representation or in a consultative or advisory role.

Security Planning Against Time

The time factor cannot be ignored in national policy. It became a significant aspect of policy planning because an effective policy must depend on continuity as well as flexibility and on future capability analysis as well as present status. Just as the State Department provides policy continuity of a diplomatic variety, the military leadership of the Department of Defense provides military policy continuity. Additionally, the military gathers military intelligence and evaluates both present and future military capabilities on which national survival may depend.

Continuity of national security policy depends, to a great degree, on military leadership because the civilian political leadership is subject to frequent change. While the Joint Chiefs of Staff may undergo a similar change in the case of a new political leadership, the Joint Staff and other participants to the military policy-making process act as a secretariat for policy continuity. Also, the expense involved in changing military posture requires that the military leadership endorse, or at the very least not

Security Commission, and many other agencies through which the military increased their influence in national security policy either through direct representation or as a consequence of advisory roles.

Security Planning against them

The line leader cannot be ignored in national policy. It became a significant aspect of policy planning because an effective policy must depend on continuity as well as flexibility and on future capability analysis as well as present action. Just as the State Department provides policy continuity of a diplomatic variety, the military leadership of the Department of Defense provides military policy continuity. Additionally, the military pattern of any institution and measures both present and future military capabilities on which national survival may depend. Continuity of national security policy depends, to a great degree, on military leadership because the civilian political leadership is subject to frequent change. While the Joint Chiefs of Staff may undergo a similar change in the case of a political leadership, the Joint Chiefs and other participants in the military policy-making process act as a stabilizing factor for policy continuity. Also, the process involved in creating military power requires that the military leadership remain, or at the very least not

actively oppose, a change in posture in order for the administration to gain Congressional approval for its actions. Examples of these aspects of continuity can be seen in the Eisenhower Administration's retention of its policy of massive retaliation or "new look" because a majority of the Joint Chiefs either supported the policy or would not officially oppose the administration. Without active support for the Army's proposed policy of "flexible response," there was no way of inducing either Congress or the administration to provide additional funds to strengthen the Army's ability to fight limited wars.⁷⁰

Quantum jumps in military technology have also provided a basis for increased military influence in national security policy. The military can make a persuasive argument that more money should be spent or more resources allocated to research and development on the basis that, if the idea of a new weapon is feasible to this nation's military leaders, potential enemies will gain a future superiority unless immediate work is commenced. The need for maintaining constant preparedness gave the military leadership a strong influence over weapons development and procurement. The fact that there is a time lag of from five to ten

⁷⁰ Maxwell D. Taylor, The Uncertain Trumpet (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1959), pp. 41 and 45-46.

years from weapon planning to the developed product often leads to waste in the form of unusable products. However, such waste has been generally accepted because the alternate to more research and development has been the possibility of losing weapons superiority.

National Interest Versus Corporate Interest

Another factor which increased military influence on national security policy was the corporate interest of the individual armed services and the military officer corps as a whole. Finer notes that "the military are especially well equipped or placed to plea the national interest to obtain their goals."⁷¹ This observation appears especially applicable to the United States armed forces following World War II. The unification controversy found all sides using the national interest argument for their own purposes. And the final result of the "National Security Act of 1947," before amendments, was to imply that the national interest would be served best by giving the military a greater voice in national security policy.

The corporate interest of the armed forces is directly concerned with matters relating to national security. In this respect, the various services are concerned with their portion of the budget and broad military policies.

⁷¹Finer, op. cit., p. 33.

The services are individually and collectively concerned with pay, promotion, retirement, housing, medical care, and other corporate interest matters. In their efforts to bring about favorable legislation, they have reacted much like other pressure groups.⁷² It is not surprising that during the "lean" years of reduced military budgets that the military expanded its efforts to affect legislation favorable to the corporate interest, but contacts with legislators and interested third parties were of similar value in increasing military influence in national security policy. The growth of military legislative offices since the end of World War II is a clear indication of the usefulness of a military lobby on Capitol Hill. The corporate interest aspect of military lobbying was described by Raymond:

The high point of the military lobby activities comes when the chiefs and their aides appear before the committees to answer questions. Some of these questions are carefully planted in advance with favorite and cooperative Congressmen. Others are anticipated. The answers are given as "personal opinions" to avoid the suggestion of insubordination if they are in conflict with administrative policy. But they are candidly intended to influence legislation. Thus the Air Force carries on its campaigns for bombers, and the Navy fights for its carriers and the Army for modern equipment, despite powerful efforts by succeeding administrations to keep expenditures down. Much of the testimony is public and carefully phased to advance service viewpoints.⁷³

⁷²Raymond, op. cit., p. 202.

⁷³Ibid., p. 203.

The military has historically been collectively concerned
 with pay, promotion, retirement, housing, medical care, and
 other corporate interest matters. In these efforts to
 bring about favorable legislation, they have formed some
 like other pressure groups.¹² It is not surprising that
 during the last years of economic military hardship (1945-
 1947) the military obtained its measure of desired legislation
 favorable to its corporate interests, and moreover with
 legislative and administrative relief granted more or less
 before its demanding military influence in national security
 policy. The growth of military legislative activity since
 the end of World War II is a clear indication of the growth
 of a military lobby on Capitol Hill. The corporate

The period following the Second World War has definitely seen a change in the traditional civilian-military relationship with regard to national security policy. The prewar role of the military as a passive actor in the national policy process gave way to an active military influence in many aspects of domestic and foreign policy. The change was conditioned by the crisis atmosphere of the cold war and has reached sufficient proportions to cause an increasing concern for the survival of American democracy. Yet, the old civilian-military distrust has been brought forward during the period when the complexities of national security demand an ever closer coordination and cooperation between the civilian-military policy-making team.

The next chapter will describe some of the problems of military influence in the organizational efforts to coordinate national security. These will primarily revolve around the unification conflict and the resulting unification act. In addition, the present organization of the Department of Defense will be described in order that the institutional framework through which military influence is exerted can be better understood.

The period following the Second World War has seen a change in the traditional civilian-military relationship with regard to national security policy. The present role of the military as a passive actor in the national policy process gave way to an active military role in many aspects of domestic and foreign policy. The change was motivated by the desire to ensure that the military was not excluded from the decision-making process in the event of a crisis. The increasing success of the survival of Western democracy, the old civilian-military distance has been brought closer during the period when the complexities of national security demands an even closer coordination and cooperation between the civilian-military policy-making team. The new concept will involve some of the military's influence in the organizational efforts to coordinate national security. These will include: review of the military's position and the resulting military plan and, in addition, the present organization of the Department of Defense will be reorganized in order that the institution through which military influence is exerted can be better understood.

CHAPTER III

ORGANIZING FOR NATIONAL SECURITY

In enacting this legislation, it is the intent of Congress to provide a comprehensive program for the security of the United States; to provide for the establishment of integrated policies and procedures for the departments, agencies, and functions of the Government relating to the national security; to provide a Department of Defense¹

Looking at the National Security Act of 1947 in retrospect, one cannot easily understand the magnitude of the controversy which surrounded its passage. Today, institutionalization of military unification is an accepted fact and principle. The size of the national defense budget alone is sufficient reason for coordinating military economic planning. Yet, the most important concern of military unification necessarily revolves around national security policy. The military must be involved in national strategy based directly or indirectly on the military power of the nation. Strategic planning must be a continuous and coordinated process, otherwise military power has little meaning and its utility as a political device cannot be

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Act of 1947 as Amended through September 20, 1966, Committee Print, 89th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 1. Hereafter referred to as National Security Act of 1947.

ORGANIZATION AND NATIONAL SECURITY

In meeting this obligation, it is the duty of Congress to provide a comprehensive program for the security of the United States; to provide for the establishment of adequate policies and procedures for the development, expansion, and retention of the Government's capacity to conduct security; to provide a framework for action . . .

Leadership in the National Security Act of 1947 is necessary, for it is the only way to ensure that the Government which represents the people, today, in the administration of military operations is an efficient and principled. The role of the national defense budget and the military system for coordinating military and some planning. For the most important element of national security is the military. The military must be involved in national security, must directly or indirectly on the military power of the nation. Strategic planning must be a continuous and coordinated process, involving military power and its meaning and its ability as a political factor cannot be

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Act of 1947 as amended (Washington, D.C., 1950, Committee Print, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000).

realized.² Why then the bitter controversy over unification?

The obvious need for unified war planning brought about the creation of the Joint Chiefs of Staff during World War II. General George C. Marshall, a member of the Joint Chiefs, saw the need for permanent institutionalization of the unified strategy concept. His early efforts to achieve this goal evolved slowly and against formidable opposition into the "National Security Act of 1947."³ However, it was not the concept of unified planning which became of paramount importance to either those who favored or those who opposed military unification. In fact, Secretary of the Navy James V. Forrestal cited a need "for the planned integration of all the elements, energies and forces in our Nation which have to be drawn upon to wage successful war."⁴ This statement was made by one of the leaders of the opposition to unification because he

²Robert E. Osgood, "War and Policy," American Defense Policy, eds. Wesley W. Posvar et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), p. 110.

³Demetrios Caraley, The Politics of Military Unification (New York: Columbia University Press, 1966), pp. 23-24.

⁴United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Defense Establishment, Hearings, 80th Cong., 1st Sess., on S.758, March 18-May 9, 1947 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1947), p. 21. Hereafter referred to as National Defense Establishment.

realized, they then the United States was united-

times

The obvious need for United States aid was

about the situation in the United States of State

World War II, General George C. Marshall, a member of the

Joint Chiefs, was the first to propose international-

tion in the United States of State. The early efforts to

achieve this goal were slow and sparse compared

negotiations with the United States in 1947.

even, it was not the concept of United States aid

because of persistent ignorance in other areas who favored

of those who opposed military intervention. In fact, many

say of the very name of international aid is that the

planned investigation of all the elements, including the

there in our nation which have to be taken upon the

successful war.¹ This statement was made by one of the

leaders of the opposition to military aid in 1947.

¹Robert C. O'Connell, "The United States and the World," *Foreign Affairs*, Vol. 25, No. 1, (January 1947), p. 110.

²General Marshall, the United States military aid to the United States, *Foreign Affairs*, Vol. 25, No. 1, (January 1947), p. 110.

³United States Department of State, Committee on the United States, *Foreign Affairs*, Vol. 25, No. 1, (January 1947), p. 110.

sincerely felt that the existing Joint Chiefs of Staff could provide unified strategy.⁵

The actual causes of the controversy surrounding military unification were too deeply seated to be solved by a single piece of legislation. The fact that several amendments to the basic law have been necessary indicates that difficulties have not been overcome to this date. In order to gain a better understanding of the present state of military influence on national security policy, some aspects of the inter-service rivalries, the conflict generated by the unification proposal and the institutionalization of a national defense organization should be covered.

I. THE UNIFICATION CONFLICT

Conflict appears to be the only terminology applicable to the controversy which surrounded unsuccessful efforts to establish a single, supreme head of the Armed Forces. The military services placed their full resources on the line. There was direct lobbying with "interested friends" in Congress. High-ranking officers made speeches, both discreet and indiscreet, supporting the position of their individual services. News leads were a common occurrence, especially to biased reporters. And each service set up

⁵Caraley, op. cit., pp. 118-119.

could provide useful answers.²

The actual names of the persons who were involved in the alleged activities were not known to the writer at the time of the investigation. The fact that several persons were involved in the activities is not surprising in view of the fact that the activities were of a long standing nature and were carried out in a systematic manner. It is also possible that the persons involved were not known to the writer at the time of the investigation.

[illegible]

special sections which were charged with the responsibility for providing ammunition in the war of words.⁶

After unification legislation was enacted, the conflict between services became somewhat muted. The peace was to be short lived; but, although the methods remained almost the same, the tenor of subsequent controversies were considerably quieter. There was also the phenomenon of a change in direction of the unification controversy as the Department of Defense organization evolved into a more powerful and centralized governmental mechanism. For purposes of organization, the unification controversy can be divided into three eras: the Truman, Eisenhower, and Kennedy-Johnson Administrations. This division roughly represents the evolution in military unification progress as well as changes in national security policy concepts.

The Truman Administration

President Truman inherited a growing demand for military unification when he took office. Although over a dozen studies had been made on this subject and some fifty-five bills or resolutions introduced under this topic since 1924, none had been a serious threat to individual service

⁶Ibid., pp. 151 and 218-226. Professor Caraley presents a particularly good account of those methods used by the individual services to influence Congress and the public.

autonomy.⁷ The increasing sentiment for centralized direction of the Armed Forces was reflected in the Congressional hearings held in April, 1944, on a proposal to establish a single armed forces department. The House Select Committee on Postwar Military Policy found that the principle was good but that the war made it inopportune to promote legislation. The issue was revived as a result of a study made under the auspices of the Joint Chiefs of Staff in April, 1945, and a study known as the Eberstadt Report made at the request of Chairman Walsh of the Senate Committee on Naval Affairs in October, 1945. These were followed by President Truman's unification message of December 19, 1945, in which he urged the establishment of a single military department. In April, 1946, Senate Bill S.2044, which closely followed the President's recommendations and also incorporated much of the Eberstadt Report, was introduced in the Senate Military Affairs Committee.⁸

While S.2044 was favorably reported on May 13, 1946, from the Military Committee, representatives of the Navy Department managed through Congressional contacts to have

⁷Timothy W. Stanley, American Defense and National Security (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1956), p. 11.

⁸National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 5-6.

anyway. The immediate solution for copyright dis-
 tion of the patent rights was referred in the Congressional
 hearings held in April, 1954, to a proposal to establish a
 single patent system. The patent system was
 on Patent Rights, which would have the principle was
 good but that the law is inappropriate to present legis-
 lation. The issue was resolved as a result of a study was
 under the auspices of the Joint Chiefs of Staff in 1951,
 1951, and a study known as the Patent Rights Study was in the
 request of Chairman of the House Committee on Patents
 Affairs in October, 1951. There was followed by President
 Truman's executive order of December 11, 1949, in which
 he signed the establishment of a single military department.
 In April, 1954, Senate Bill S. 1954, which closely follows
 the President's recommendations and also incorporates some
 of the Patent Rights, was introduced in the Senate. The
 bill was passed.

With S. 1954 was favorably reported on May 11, 1955,
 from the Military Committee, representative of the war
 Department through House Committee on Patents in 1955.

Patent Rights Study was prepared by the Joint Chiefs of Staff
 in April, 1951, and was known as the Patent Rights Study.
 The study was prepared by the Joint Chiefs of Staff in April, 1951.

the bill referred to the Senate Naval Affairs Committee.⁹ The Navy Department opposed the bill when hearings were held by this committee and sufficient influence was brought to bear to have the measure die without being reported out. This effort was followed by President Truman's action directing the service chiefs to attempt agreement on some form of unification. An agreement was reached January 16, 1946. The following month, the President transmitted to Congress a proposed bill which had the approval of the War Department, Navy Department, and the Joint Chiefs of Staff.¹⁰

Thus, the chronological record indicates that three years of intense effort and Presidential support was necessary to bring a bill before the Congress with a reasonable chance of passage. The influence and pressure which was exerted by all parties to the unification controversy resulted in a division of opinion which was not only limited to the military services but also permeated other governmental organizations and reached deeply into the public consciousness. The bitterness generated by the unification conflict was reflected by a statement in The New York Times that "ever since V-J Day the gloves have been discarded,

⁹Walter Millis (ed.), The Forrestal Diaries (New York: The Viking Press, 1951), p. 121.

¹⁰National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 6-7.

the bill referred to the Senate Small Affairs Committee.
The Navy Department opposed the bill even though it was
held by this committee and modified legislation was passed
to deal in part the interests the National Relief Campaign and
this matter was followed by President Truman's action
dismissing the Justice Chief as interim agreement to some
form of modification. An agreement was reached January 10,
1946. The following month, the War Relocation Authority
operates a proposed bill which had the approval of the War
Department, Navy Department, and the Joint Chiefs of

Page 10

...that, the zoological record indicates that there
...to intense study and practical support all other
...to bring a bill before the Congress with a legislative
...of passage. The influence and pressure will be
...by all parties in the legislative process. The
...is a division of opinion which we not only find
...the military services but also amongst other groups
...and reached deeply into the public
...The bill was introduced by the President
...in the House of Representatives in the 100th Congress
...and the Senate.

and what is happening on Capitol Hill is but the beginning of what will be a brass-knuckle fight to the finish."¹¹

The actual conflict, prior to passage of the unification bill, had several active aspects. The most significant of these aspects was the corporate interest of the three services, the concept of civilian supremacy, and the basic disagreement over the most efficient and effective means of increasing the nation's security. Running through the texture of legitimate controversy was the clash of personalities, both within the military and among civilian supporters of the various service positions, and the personal vested interests of some segments of the Armed Forces Officer Corps.

The corporate interest of the Army was directed toward maintenance of its status as a military power during the postwar period. The Army leadership feared that under peace-time conditions that it would have to take a secondary position to the more glamorous Navy and Air Force in the division of scarce appropriations. This led to the desire for a single service secretary who would have an obligation to maintain parity between the three services. The Air Force supported the Army's goal of a single service secretary because it appeared to be the most expeditious means

¹¹News item in The New York Times, October 20, 1945.

for gaining a status of equality with the Army and the Navy. The Navy opposed such an organization because it feared a coalition between the Army and Air Force, within a unified military establishment, would result in a loss of Navy prestige, flexibility and, perhaps, even their naval aviation and Marine Corps units.¹²

The aspect of corporate interest which was explicit in the unification controversy concerned the roles and missions of the individual services. It was in this area that both military and civilian leaders could actively argue for their services' interests without appearing to subordinate the national necessity of defense. Without disregarding the fact that these leaders sincerely believed that their positions were truly in the national interest, it was apparent that the bill was considerably diluted by the alterations and modifications necessary to allay fears of infringement on corporate interest of the individual services.¹³ During the latter part of 1946, the service

¹² Millis, op. cit., pp. 146-147.

¹³ National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 51-52. In a letter to the Chairman of the Senate Armed Services Committee holding hearings on unification, Secretary of the Navy Forrestal wrote: "You will recall that Senator Byrd asked me to . . . point out the provisions of S.758 which would support my statement that the bill . . . adequately safeguards the morale and autonomy of the Navy and its components, including particularly the Fleet Marine Forces and naval aviation. The provision on which I base this statement are to be found explicitly in sections

leaders were steadily reaching a common compromise position on the administration aspects of unification. Yet, it was not until agreement was reached on the functions, roles, and missions of the individual services that official, joint War and Navy Department support was forthcoming.¹⁴

Part of the controversy definitely concerned the concept of civilian supremacy as applicable to the proposed single "super" Secretary and the proposed Chief of Staff. On the one hand, the argument was put forward that a single civilian Secretary would strengthen civilian direction and control of the military leaders. This idea had early support from President Truman. Secretary Forrestal recorded discussion about a combined military department on July 30, 1945, in which the President talked about destroying the "political cliques that run the Army and the Navy" and that this subject appeared to be a fixation of his.¹⁵

The primary argument in Congress over the civilian supremacy issue in the unification controversy was apparently subjective in nature. Those members who favored the Army-Army Air Force position generally used the argument that a single secretary would strengthen civilian supremacy

102(a), 103, 106(a), 102(b), and 201(a)." This theme is also explicitly referred to in Secretary of War Patterson's testimony, p. 52, and in Assistant Secretary of War for Air W. Stuart Symington's prepared statement, p. 87.

¹⁴National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 2-3.

¹⁵Millis, op. cit., p. 88.

leaders were steadily winning a common cooperative position
 on the international aspects of military action. It was
 not until agreement was reached on the technical, tactical,
 and mission of the involved services that official
 joint and inter-agency cooperation was forthcoming.¹⁷

Part of the contemporary military environment was
 concept of civilian involvement as epitomized by the proposed
 single joint command and the proposed Joint of Staff.
 On the one hand, the command was not to be a single
 civilian authority would therefore involve civilian and
 control of the military leaders. The idea had been
 part from the United States. Military involvement
 discussion about a national military department on July 20,
 1942, in which the President talked about creating the
 "political climate that was the Army and Navy and that
 this single command to be a fixation of his."¹⁸

The military movement in Congress over the civilian
 supremacy issue in the military command was almost
 entirely subjective in nature. These subjects are detailed in
 Appendix A. The military generally used the argument
 that a single authority would strengthen civilian leadership.

¹⁷ For example, see the Joint Chiefs of Staff, "The Joint Chiefs of Staff
 also specifically referred to the importance of the President's
 leadership, p. 21, in the Joint Chiefs of Staff, p. 21,
 and in the Joint Chiefs of Staff, p. 21.

¹⁸ National Archives, Records Administration, RG 226, Box 1-4.
¹⁹ National Archives, Records Administration, RG 226, Box 1-4.

over the military. The supporters of the Navy's position expressed considerable apprehension over the power of a super-secretary or a chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In fact, Secretary Forrestal and the Navy Admirals found themselves in the unusual position of having to assure Congressmen that the 1947 bill did not provide extensive powers to the proposed Secretary of Defense.¹⁶ Yet, there was considerable evidence to indicate that the supremacy issue, to Congress, was more concerned with who would be supreme, the President or Congress, in determination of military policy. Those Congressmen who wished to retain influence over military matters saw consolidation under a single secretary as a further weakening of Congressional control of executive branch agencies.¹⁷

The views of the military on a single Secretary of Defense covered several areas. In addition to the corporate interest aspect which has been previously mentioned, there was a strong desire of the top Army generals, particularly General Eisenhower, for a decisive role in strategic planning. After testifying that the unanimity system employed by the Joint Chiefs of Staff had been indecisive and slow in World War II, the General endorsed the single secretary

¹⁶ National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 35-37, and 134-135.

¹⁷ Caraley, op. cit., pp. 189-190.

over the military. The necessity of the Navy's position
 seemed completely unquestioned by the time of a
 report-reading by a chairman of the House of Representatives.
 In fact, Secretary of the Navy and the Navy Committee
 themselves in the House of Representatives were leaving no doubt
 Congressmen that the Navy had not positive evidence
 power to the proposed necessary of defense.¹⁶ This, then,
 was the evidence in evidence to indicate that the necessary
 laws, as Congress, was now concerned with the world in
 evidence, the President in Congress, in the House of
 military policy. From Congress, the world in evidence
 influence over military matters was considered under a
 single authority as a subject of Congress.¹⁷

The view of the military as a single authority in
 defense against national power. In addition to the necessary
 influence against which the Navy had previously mentioned, there
 was a strong desire of the Navy to have, particularly
 general agreement, for a decisive role in the world's place.
 and, after recognizing that the military was the only
 by the House of Representatives and the House of Representatives
 in the House of Representatives, the House of Representatives

¹⁶ *General Nelson's Statement*, pp. 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

¹⁷ *General Nelson's Statement*, pp. 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

concept as necessary and desirable to correct this deficiency. When questioned as to the wisdom of a decision made by a non-professional who might be acting on the basis of a choice between conflicting recommendations, General Eisenhower replied: "In war, you must have decision. A bum decision is better than none. And the trouble is that when you get three, you finally get none."¹⁸

The matter of unified strategy and command of operations was probably one of the less controversial aspects of unification. All services supported the principle of this concept and only differed in whether they believed that the existing system provided adequate machinery to promote the principle in practice. The discussion which surrounded joint operations and planning led to initiation of the Joint Command concept which was formulated by Admiral Nimitz and General Eisenhower in August, 1946.¹⁹ To the Navy, this plan appeared sufficient to prove that consolidation was not necessary to insure efficient military cooperation in both planning and operations.

The personal factor was a strong supplement to the more or less legitimate controversy which unification generated. The people who took part in the controversy

¹⁸National Defense Establishment, op. cit., p. 113.

¹⁹Millis, op. cit., p. 195.

concept as necessary and desirable in concept this will-
 clearly. When questioned as to the wisdom of a decision
 made by a non-professional who might be relying on the basis
 of a choice between conflicting recommendations, General
 Eisenhower replied: "In war, you must have decisions."
 His decision is better than none. And the trouble is that
 when you get there, you finally get there.¹²

The matter of unified strategy and command of opera-
 tions was probably one of the least controversial aspects of
 unification. All services supported the principle of this
 concept and only differed in whether they believed that the
 existing system provided adequate machinery to promote the
 principle in practice. The discussion which surrounded
 joint operations and planning led to initiation of the
 Joint Command concept which was formulated by Admiral
 Nimitz and General Eisenhower in August, 1945.¹³ To the
 Navy, this plan appeared sufficient to prove that unifica-
 tion was not necessary to insure efficient military opera-
 tion in joint planning and operations.

The personal factor was a strong opponent to the
 more or less legislative controversy which unification
 generated. The people who took part in the controversy

¹² General Eisenhower's War, pp. 212, 213.

¹³ General Eisenhower's War, p. 172.

represented the top civilian and military leaders in the nation. Accusations and counter accusations made interesting news coverage; and individuals from opposing positions went out of their way to criticize and denounce the views of their opponents. The cases of personal overzealousness were numerous. It was not surprising that, in the three years prior to enactment of the bill, deep and bitter rifts developed over the issue.²⁰

The time span of the conflict was causing all parties to weary of the issue. The Administration, Congress, and the public were relieved when the joint War and Navy Department endorsement of unification was announced. Hearings on the bill progressed with a minimum of explicit dissent until the Marine Corps Commandant, General Vandegrift expressed his dissatisfaction in April, 1947.²¹ When this happened, a reopening of the whole controversy appeared imminent. An item in the New York Herald Tribune reflected the state of public opinion:

General Vandegrift's insurgency has opened up a whole flood of barely repressed fears, jealousies, misunderstandings, and mental reservations in which the whole agreement, so painfully achieved, threatens to perish. These are not only service jealousies. The various congressional committees have squabbled and delayed over their respective privileges in the matter, individual statesmen have capitalized on

²⁰Caraley, op. cit., pp. 220-230.

²¹National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 412-413.

repeated the top of the hill and the hillside in the
distance. The distance was about 100 feet and the hillside
was covered with low vegetation. The hillside was covered
with low vegetation and the hillside was covered with low
vegetation. The hillside was covered with low vegetation
and the hillside was covered with low vegetation. The hillside
was covered with low vegetation and the hillside was covered
with low vegetation. The hillside was covered with low
vegetation and the hillside was covered with low vegetation.

[illegible]

General Youngblood's assignment was viewed as a
 move from a highly technical staff position
 to a more general, and more responsible, position
 in the command, as a result of which, however, the
 assignment was not a direct promotion.
 The various organizational changes were explained
 and related over their respective divisions in the
 main. The following were included in

this or that divisive interest rather than aiming at the one national goal of an adequately controlled military system, and in the process the measure of agreement that was achieved has been wearing thin while the old paralyzing bitterness has been reviving in the form of more bitter still. The bill may fail, and if it does we shall be left with a military system more deeply divided, and consequently more incompetent for its mission than before.

In the face of this situation it is impossible not to feel that, between the Congressmen and the services, the greatest nation in the world has been conducting its vital military affairs like a tin horn principality.²²

Unification became a fact, albeit a weak and controversial fact, on July 26, 1947. Even though the President and the War Department were not satisfied with what was described as a Navy bill, all parties were weary of the conflict and relieved that it was finished.²³ During the rejoicing, hardly anyone noticed the true significance of the unification controversy.

The organization which was embodied in the 1947 Act provided the basis for improving the overall security posture of the nation. But, overlooked in the course of the controversy, the defense posture of the United States had been allowed to ebb to a dangerous point at the time when the Soviet threat was increasing. From the end of World War II until enactment of the "national Security Act of

²² Editorial in the New York Herald Tribune, May 1, 1947.

²³ Caraley, op. cit., p. 269.

This is one of the basic principles of the one national goal of an adequately controlled military system, and in the process the measure of agreement that has been reached has been that while the old paralyzing differences have been resolved in the form of more bitter still. The bill may fail, and it is too early to tell what a military system more deeply divided, and consequently more immune to the nation than before.

In the face of this situation it is impossible not to feel that, between the Congressmen and the army, the greatest nation in the world has been conceding its vital military affairs like a tin can principle.

Unification means a fact, almost a war and peace-

verbal fact, on July 20, 1947. Even though the President

and the war department were not satisfied with what was

described as a Navy bill, all parties were ready to the

conflict and relieved that it was finished.²¹ During the

rejoicing, hardly anyone noticed the true significance of

the unification controversy.

The organization which was modeled in the 1947 Act

provided the basis for improving the overall security pro-

cess of the nation. But, overlooked in the course of the

controversy, the defense program of the United States had

been allowed to slip to a dangerous point at the time when

the Soviet threat was increasing. From the end of World

War II until recently, of the national security act of

²¹ Editorial in the New York Herald Tribune, May 17,

1947.

²² Congressional Record, 71st Cong., 2d Sess., p. 1442.

1947" the services were seriously handicapped by the machinations of the controversy and the uncertainty of their future disposition. The editor of The Forrestal Diaries came to the conclusion that:

It would be impossible to lay down any long range military plans or policies, to determine properly the size or structure of the military machine to be maintained, or to face with any consistency and forethought the underlying politico-military problems which that machine existed to meet. It is hardly too much to say that the battle over unification delayed the nation for a year or two in grappling with the already dire state of world affairs.²⁴

Considering the steady deterioration of the shaky peace period following World War II, it is doubtful that the same rate of disarmament, especially in manpower, would have been undertaken by the United States if a unified national security organization had existed. As early as August, 1945, the records indicate that the military leaders foresaw the danger of demobilizing in the rapid manner ordered by the President because this would leave a power vacuum in Europe. The President made his decision for an immediate and drastic cutback of military forces on the advice of the Postmaster General and for purely domestic, partisan political reasons.²⁵ It is extremely doubtful that if the military advice had been developed under a

²⁴ Millis, op. cit., p.153.

²⁵ Ibid., pp. 89-90.

1947. The services were seriously handicapped by the lack of the nation of the country and the uncertainty of their future disposition. The editor of The Forward stated that in the conclusion there

It would be impossible to lay down any fixed camp military plans or policies, to determine precisely the aim or structure of the military machine to be maintained, or to face with any consistency and logic through the underlying political-military system which that machine related to itself. It is clearly too much to say that the battle over political changes in the nation for a year or two is dragging with the already wide scope of world affairs.²¹

Considering the steady deterioration of the army power period following World War II, it is doubtful that the same rate of disintegration, especially in manpower, would have been undertaken by the United States if a unified national security organization had existed. As early as August, 1945, the records indicate that the military leaders foresaw the danger of demobilizing in the early summer ordered by the President because this would leave a power vacuum in Europe. The President made his decision for an immediate and drastic curbing of military forces for the advice of the President General and the Chief of Staff, certain political reasons.²² It is extremely doubtful that if the military advice had been followed under a

²¹ Forward, pp. 21-22, 23-24.

²² Forward, pp. 25-26.

unified system and submitted through the prestigious National Security Council that the President would have gambled with the nation's security position.

The unification conflict did not cease with the act of unifying. The next phase of the controversy began almost immediately after the "National Security Act" took effect. The act of unification and subsequent functioning of the act was aptly described by Marx Leva, Special Assistant to the Secretary of Defense in a speech delivered in April, 1949. His description stated that:

The 1947 Act . . . consisted of a simultaneous marriage (joining the Army and Navy in a state of more or less happy wedlock), a divorce (separating the Air Force from the Army), and twin births (creating the over-all organization known as the National Military Establishment, and creating the Air Force as well).

Up to the present time, the divorce of the Air Force from the Army has proceeded more smoothly than has the marriage of the Army and Navy. It may be that the explanation for this situation can be traced to the fact that the Army, which greatly desired unification, was an over ardent bridegroom--while the Navy was a most reluctant bride.²⁶

However, new dimensions were being added to the unification controversy which were not included in Mr. Leva's

²⁶United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Act Amendments of 1949, Hearings, 81st Cong., 1st Sess., on S.1269 and S.1843, March 24-May 6, 1949 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1949), p. 256. Hereafter referred to as National Security Act Amendments of 1949.

united system and suggested through the Presidential
National Security Council that the President would have
granted with the nation's security position.

The unified coalition did not come with the act
of uniting. The next phase of the controversy began in
most immediately after the National Security Act, 1947.
The act of unification and subsequent reorganization
of the act was fully described by this issue, Special
Assistant to the Secretary of Defense in a speech delivered
in April, 1949. His description stated that:

The 1947 act was a consolidation of a miscellaneous
marriage (joining the Army and Navy in a union of
more or less happy wedlock), a divorce (dissolving
the old force from the Army), and then a new
(creating an over-all organization known as the
National Military Establishment, and creating the
the Force as well).

Up to the present time, the divorce of the old
Force from the Army has proceeded more smoothly than
has the marriage of the Army and Navy. It may be
that the explanation for this situation can be traced
to the fact that the Army, which greatly desired
unification, was an over-riding influence—while
the Navy was a most reluctant partner.

However, new elements were being added to the uni-
fication controversy which were not included in the 1947

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed
Services, National Security Act Amendments of 1947, Hearings,
Sixty-first Congress, 1st Sess., on S. 1113 and S. 1114, 1947, pp. 1-2.
S. 1113 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1947).
S. 1114. Hearings referred to as National Security Act
Amendments of 1947.

description and which were not a factor in the 1944-1947 period. These included two new actors who had developed corporate interests in their own right--the Secretary of Defense and the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Both of these actors wished to increase their sphere of influence and authority.²⁷ In fact, the Senate hearings on the National Security Act Amendments of 1949 were almost completely concerned with this aspect of unification. The Administration bill, as summarized by Secretary of Defense Forrestal, was designed to:

(1) Clarify the authority of the Secretary of Defense to direct and control the military departments; (2) Provide the Secretary with the additional staff assistance required for the proper exercise of his increased authority, including an under Secretary of Defense and a Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff; (3) Strengthen civilian control over the Joint Chiefs of Staff by providing the Chairman I have just mentioned, who would be directly accountable to the President and the Secretary of Defense, rather than to the individual military departments; (4) Recreate the Munitions Board and the Research and Development Board as staff agencies directly responsible to the Secretary of Defense.²⁸

The only military objection to the bill was made by the Joint Chiefs of Staff who wished to limit the powers which it would grant to the Secretary of Defense. At the same time, the Joint Chiefs entered recommendations during

²⁷ Caraley, op. cit., p. 282.

²⁸ National Security Act Amendments of 1949, op. cit., pp. 8-9.

organization and which were not a factor in the 1952-1954 period. These included the fact that the Department of Defense and the Joint Chiefs of Staff, both of them, were not involved in the decision-making process. The fact that the Department of Defense and the Joint Chiefs of Staff were not involved in the decision-making process is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Department of Defense and the Joint Chiefs of Staff were not involved in the decision-making process is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Department of Defense and the Joint Chiefs of Staff were not involved in the decision-making process is a fact which is not mentioned in the report.

(1) Clearly the authority of the Secretary of Defense to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Secretary of Defense has the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Secretary of Defense has the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Secretary of Defense has the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Secretary of Defense has the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report.

The only other objection to the bill is that it would give the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the Department of Defense the authority to direct and control the military forces. This is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the Department of Defense have the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report. The fact that the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the Department of Defense have the authority to direct and control the military forces is a fact which is not mentioned in the report.

their testimony which would strengthen, or at least maintain, their own position of influence. In this respect, they wished to limit the authority of the proposed Chairman of the Joint Chiefs; they desired the authority to name the director of the Joint Staff which presently resided in the Secretary; they wanted to strike out a proposed provision which would allow the Secretary to make inter-service personnel transfers; they desired a clear-cut definition of Joint Chief functions which could not be abraded by the Secretary of Defense; and they suggested that the Munitions Board fall under their direction rather than the Secretary's.²⁹

The fact that amendment was felt necessary implies that unification was not succeeding. The economies being effected through less duplication was one of the causes of continued inter-service competition. With an austere budget, the services competed even more sharply for scarce appropriations. This often took the form of berating the needs or functions of the other services and, therefore, kept the rivalry at a high pitch, even though more muted to the public ear.³⁰

²⁹ Ibid., pp. 107-125.

³⁰ Caraley, op. cit., pp. 282-283.

their readiness which would strengthen, or at least maintain their own position of indifference. In this respect, they wished to limit the authority of the proposed Council of the State; they desired the authority to come into existence on the joint basis which previously existed in the Secretary; they wanted to strike out a proposed provision which would allow the Secretary to make later-arriving personnel transfers; they desired a clear-cut definition of joint Chief Executive which would not be affected by the Secretary of Defense; and they suggested that the President should fall under their direction rather than the Secretary.

15

The last paragraph was felt necessary in order that satisfaction was not exceeded. The economic being affected through joint consideration was one of the major components of service organization. With an increase budget, the services required over more than fifty per cent appropriate. This often took the form of making the needs or functions of the other services and, therefore, kept the rivalry at a high pitch, even though more money was the result.

20

12
1911-12, 101-111.

16
1911-12, 101-111.

With the Amendments of 1949, the Secretary of Defense gained greater direction over the newly-established Executive Department of Defense. The increased power was almost immediately wielded in the so-called "revolt of the Admirals" incident. In this case, Secretary of Defense Louis Johnson made the decision to stop work on the U.S.S. United States, a new super carrier, and the Navy carried its case to Congress and the public. This action was considered insubordination by the Secretary, and he requested that the Chief of Naval Operations, who was also a Joint Chief, be relieved. The President complied with the request and Admiral Denfield dutifully submitted his resignation.³¹

The Secretary of Defense was soon to find, however, that the political influence of the military leaders also had to be reckoned with. During the two years subsequent to the carrier incident and the resulting B-36 controversy, the Secretary fell under increasing criticism of the press and Congress.³² The running fight between Secretary Johnson and the services was culminated in his dismissal in

³¹ Stanley, op. cit., pp. 93-95.

³² United States Congress, Senate Document No. 204, Mobilization Planning and the National Security (1950-1960): Problems and Issues, Prepared by the Legislative Reference Service of the Library of Congress, 81st Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1950), pp. 243-245.

September of 1950 as a result of military unpreparedness for the war in Korea.³³

The Eisenhower Administration

The next major phase in the unification conflict came as a result of experiences gained in the Korean War and a change in the Administration. On February 19, 1953, the Secretary of Defense, on the authority and direction of President Eisenhower, ordered a study of the Defense Department Organization. This resulted in the Rockefeller Committee investigation and report. The committee heard testimony from only twenty-two specially invited witnesses and deliberated only a few weeks before it brought in its findings.³⁴ The recommendations of the Rockefeller Report became almost in its entirety "Reorganization Plan Number 6 of 1953."³⁵

The reorganization of the Department of Defense proposed and effected in 1953 hardly mentioned the Armed Forces. The primary significance of the plan was to strengthen both the Secretary of Defense and the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In addition to adding six

³³ Stanley, op. cit., p. 99.

³⁴ R. Earl McClendon, Changes in Organization for National Defense, 1949-1953 (Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama: Air University Documentary Research Study, 1956), pp. 35-37.

³⁵ Ibid., p. 49.

September of 1950 as a result of military newspaper
for the war in Korea.¹¹

The General Investigation

The next major phase in the investigation consisted

in a review of the records of the Federal Bureau of

Investigation in the Washington, D. C. office, in 1951.

The records of the Federal Bureau of Investigation in

the Washington, D. C. office, showed a copy of the Bureau's

general investigation, dated in the Washington, D. C.

office investigation and report. The Washington, D. C.

office report was only a summary of the investigation and

was submitted only a few weeks before it was

finalized.¹² The recommendations of the Washington, D. C.

office were in its final report dated June 1951.

of 1951.¹³

The investigation of the Bureau of Investigation

was also affected in 1951 largely because the Bureau

was then in the process of reorganizing its staff.

strengthened both the Bureau of Investigation and the

of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In addition to adding the

¹¹ See, for example, the report of the

¹² See, for example, the report of the
National Bureau of Investigation, dated June 1951, at Washington, D. C.
The report was submitted to the Joint Chiefs of Staff, dated June 1951.

¹³ See, for example, the report of the

additional Assistant Secretaries and a General Council to the Secretary of Defense's staff and dissolving various boards with the newly-assigned Assistant Secretaries taking over these functions, the "Plan" gave to the Secretary of Defense the authority to transfer personnel, resources, and functions as he deemed necessary for national security. The Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff was placed in a superior position to the Joint Chiefs and other functions, normally conducted by the Joint Chiefs, were transferred to the Chairman.³⁶

The effect of the "Reorganization Plan of 1953" was to accomplish a greater degree of unification than had been heretofore possible. For example, the sacredness of the Key West Agreement was radically undermined. Just two days after the "Plan" became law, the Secretary of Defense ordered a revision of the functions of the Armed Forces in order to make them more compatible to the unified command concept.³⁷

This action undoubtedly improved the overall security posture of the nation; however, it did little to improve the basic causes for controversy among the services--the competition caused by corporate interest. In fact, the implementation of the Rockefeller Committee recommendation

³⁶Ibid., p. 75.

³⁷Ibid., p. 68.

additional Assistant Secretaries and a General Council to the Secretary of Defense's staff and advisory system boards with the newly-assigned Assistant Secretaries filling over these positions. The plan for the Secretary of Defense has authority to transfer personnel, resources, and functions as he deemed necessary for national security. The Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff was placed in a superior position to the Joint Chiefs and other officials, normally composed by the Joint Chiefs, were transferred to the Chairman.⁷⁶

The effect of the reorganization plan of 1957 was to encourage a greater degree of unified command and control throughout the service. For example, the Secretary of Defense now has authority over all military activities. This has helped to bring about a more unified command. The Secretary of Defense after the 1957 reorganization has the authority to order a revision of the functions of the armed forces in order to take them into account in the military command concept.⁷⁷

The reorganization improved the overall security posture of the nation; however, it did little to improve the basic issues for defense, among the services--the competition caused by separate interests in their own organizations in the national defense establishment.

⁷⁶ Ibid., p. 14.

⁷⁷ Ibid., p. 14.

was bound to have a disquieting effect on the Naval Service because these suggested reforms closely paralleled the President's proposals when he was the Army's Chief of Staff supporting the 1946 and 1947 bills on unification.³⁸

The President's "Reorganization Plan No. 6 of 1953" reflected the evolution of the unification conflict to matters substantially embracing structural political power. This was not to imply that the differences and disagreements between the services were becoming less intense or that unification had become a dead issue with the military. It meant that the influence of military leaders had been considerably degraded and that civilian political control had been strengthened. This was the period in which military dissent was apt to cause the invoking of sanctions, and the mere disagreement with the administration politico-military party line would cause the exertion of frequent and extensive pressure toward conformance.³⁹

This period also saw the entrance of the military into the political arena. While there had been political actions at earlier dates, the concept that military men should deal with only military matters was firmly established. "They were expected to accept public responsibility

³⁸ National Defense Establishment, op. cit., pp. 97-102.

³⁹ Maxwell D. Taylor, The Uncertain Trumpet (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1959), p. 19.

was needed to have a dispassionate report on the Navy's service because these suggested reforms closely paralleled the President's proposals when he was the Navy's Chief of Staff supporting the 1946 and 1947 bills on militarization.¹⁰

The President's "Reorganization Plan No. 2 of 1947" reflected the evolution of the militarized working to meet the substantially increased structural political power. This was not to imply that the differences and disagreements between the services were becoming less intense or that militarization had become a good thing with the military. It meant that the influence of military leaders had been considerably expanded and that civilian political control had been strengthened. This was the period in which military dissent was not so much the subject of attention and the more disagreement with the administration policies. Military party lines would cause the execution of programs and excessive pressure toward compromise.¹¹

This period also saw the entrance of the military into the political arena. While there had been political action at earlier stages, the concept that military men should deal with only military matters was clearly stated. "They were expected to accept public responsibility

¹⁰ National Defense Reorganization, 90-212, 100-47.

¹¹ Kenneth W. Taylor, *The American General* (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1957), p. 12.

for the actions of the Administration in the field of Military Policy," according to General Taylor, "regardless of their own views and recommendations." And later, speaking of the mass exodus of the Joint Chiefs of Staff when President Eisenhower took office, General Taylor was to say:

This event was profoundly disturbing to most professional military men. It suggested that the Joint Chiefs belonged to the Administration in power and were expected to be the spokesmen for its military policy.⁴⁰

Most of the Eisenhower Administration was to continue with undercurrents of the unification conflict bubbling to the surface periodically. The trend became one of differences in strategic concepts which reflected the views of the various service leaders and the Administration.⁴¹ The Administration concern for a balanced budget and the resulting competition for favorable consideration within the budget process were also important factors in the controversy.⁴² The methods of conflict, news leaks, and informal liaison with "friends" in Congress were also continued. The speech-making activities of military leaders were curtailed but not eliminated.⁴³

⁴⁰Ibid., pp. 19-20.

⁴¹Ibid., pp. 40-41.

⁴²Caraley, op. cit., pp. 282-283.

⁴³John M. Swomley, The Military Establishment (Boston: Beacon Press, 1964), p. 109. Professor Swomley cited as the source of this information a news conference made by President Kennedy, February 1, 1961. While

for the actions of the administration in the field of military policy," according to General Taylor, "regardless of their own views and recommendations." And later, speaking of the mass exodus of the Joint Chiefs of Staff when President Eisenhower took office, General Taylor was to say:

This event was probably discussed in most professional military men. It suggested that the Joint Chiefs belonged to the administration in power and were expected to be the spokesmen for its military policy.⁴⁰

Most of the Eisenhower Administration was to continue with undercurrents of the unification conflict existing on the surface periodically. The trend became one of difference in strategic concepts which reflected the views of the various service leaders and the Administration.⁴¹ The administration concern for a balanced budget and the resulting competition for favorable consideration within the budget process were also important factors in the controversy.⁴² The method of conflict, new ideas, and internal liaison with "friends" in Congress were also continued. The speech-making activities of military leaders were curtailed but not eliminated.⁴³

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 12-13. ⁴¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 40-41.

⁴² *Ibid.*, pp. 41-42.

⁴³ John H. Swenson, *The Military Establishment* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1954), p. 107. Swenson's study listed as the source of this information a news conference held by President Kennedy, February 1, 1961, while

The only other significant aspect of the unification controversy, during the Eisenhower Administration, was the reorganization and streamlining of the military chain of command in 1958. This was accomplished by the elimination of extra administration echelons and offices in the military chain of command and provided for the direct operation of the joint command system by the Joint Chiefs of Staff. It also strengthened the Department of Defense's control of the individual service departments by stripping these agencies of operational functions except those in support of operating forces.⁴⁴

The Kennedy-Johnson Administrations

The Kennedy-Johnson Administrations offered real hope for resolving some of the causes of the continuing unification controversy. These efforts were primarily concerned with the budget process. The practice of a ceiling being arbitrarily placed on defense spending, as was practiced during the Eisenhower Administration, was to be replaced with a more realistic system consisting of the individual services determining what was needed to maintain

specifics cannot be substantiated, this statement apparently refers to the number of official speech clearances denied during the Eisenhower Administration by the Department of Defense.

⁴⁴Caraley, op. cit., p. 283.

The only other significant aspect of the military controversy, during the Eisenhower Administration, was the reorganization and streamlining of the military chain of command in 1953. This was accomplished by the elimination of extra administrative agencies and offices in the military chain of command and provided for the direct reporting of the joint command system by the Joint Chiefs of Staff. It also strengthened the Department of Defense's control of the individual service departments by stripping these agencies of operational functions except those in support of operating forces.⁶⁴

The Kennedy-Johnson Administrations

The Kennedy-Johnson Administrations entered with hope for resolving some of the causes of the continuing military controversy. These efforts were primarily concerned with the budget process. The practice of a ceiling being arbitrarily placed on defense spending, as was practiced during the Eisenhower Administration, was to be replaced with a more realistic system consisting of the individual services determining what was needed to maintain

specifics cannot be substantiated. This statement apparently refers to the number of official reports discussed during the Eisenhower Administration by the Department of Defense.

⁶⁴ Gensler, pp. 252-253.

an integrated defense posture. This was the official statement of policy:

Throughout the preparation of . . . the fiscal year of 1965 budget, we have been guided by the same two general instructions given to me originally by President Kennedy and re-emphasized so strongly by President Johnson, namely, to develop the force structure necessary to meet our military requirements without regard to arbitrary budget ceiling or predetermined financial limits, and to procure and operate this force at the lowest possible cost.⁴⁵

The budget policy was a positive step toward lessening the factors which caused inter-service rivalries. However, the Kennedy-Johnson Administrations strengthened the Secretary of Defense's control of military policy to an even greater extent than had been effected previously and, therefore, all services lost more of their influence and prestige. This situation was bound to cause friction between the new, more powerful office of the Department of Defense and the military departments.⁴⁶

The old and continuing competition between the services became more muted in the Kennedy-Johnson Administration. While part of the relative quietness may have been

⁴⁵United States Department of Defense, Statement of Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara Before the House Armed Services Committee on the Fiscal Year 1965-69 Defense Program and 1965 Defense Budget, January 27, 1964, p. 2. (Mimeographed.)

⁴⁶Harry H. Ransom, "Department of Defense: Unity or Confederation," American Defense Policy, ed. Wesley W. Posvar et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), p. 179.

an integrated defense posture. This was the official stance
 made in policy.

Throughout the preparation of the 1963
 year of 1963 budget, we have been guided by the same
 two general principles given to us originally by
 President Kennedy and re-emphasized so strongly by
 President Johnson, namely, to develop the force
 structure necessary to meet our military require-
 ments without regard to military budget ceiling or
 government financial limits, and to procure and
 operate this force at the lowest possible cost.²⁷

The budget policy was explicitly used to guide us in
 the future when we were later called to assist. How-
 ever, the Kennedy-Johnson administration emphasized the
 necessity of defense's control of military policy to an
 even greater extent than had been intended previously and,
 therefore, all services lost some of their influence and
 prestige. This situation was bound to make it
 between the two, more powerful office of the Department of
 Defense and the military departments.²⁸

The old and continuing competition between the ser-
 vices became more acute in the Kennedy-Johnson adminis-
 tration. While part of the relative defense was now down

²⁷ "Joint Chiefs of Staff, Department of Defense, Statement of
 Secretary of Defense Robert A. McNamara before the House
 Armed Services Committee on the Fiscal Year 1964 Defense
 Program and Joint Defense Budget, January 27, 1964, p. 2.
 (Unpublished.)

²⁸ "Henry R. Hansen, 'Department of Defense, Daily of
 Government', *Washington Post*, 24 January 64.
 Foster et al., *Washington Post*, 24 January 1964, p. 1.
 p. 179.

the result of the new budget policy, the fact that the Secretary of Defense further tightened the controls over press releases and speeches of officers should not be discounted.⁴⁷ Yet, even with tighter controls, the dissents by military figures, directed against the Office of the Department of Defense, have grown stronger, even if less effective.

Some of the controversies, which have erupted since 1961, involved the TFX, the B-70, nuclear frigates, and NIKE-X missiles. These were controversies which struck too close to home for the professional military officer. They were questions which involved the professional expertise of the military and the ultimate decisions were made by the civilian leadership.⁴⁸ Therefore, regardless of system used to derive the decision, civilian expertise was utilized in the determination of the military effectiveness of weapons or weapons systems.

Another area of friction during this period has been the charge that the civilian leaders within the Department of Defense have used pressure on military officers who hold differing opinions on strategy or military policy. The nature of this controversy was reflected during Senate

⁴⁷ Ibid., p. 178.

⁴⁸ Wesley W. Posvar, "The Realm of Obscurity," American Defense Policy, op. cit., p. 230.

the result of the new policy. The fact that the Secretary of Defense further tightened the controls over press releases and speeches of officers should not be considered.⁴⁷ Yet, even with tighter controls, the damage by military leaders, directed against the Office of the Department of Defense, have been enormous, even if they are effective.

Some of the controversies, which have arisen since 1961, involved one T-4, one T-70, and one T-100, and without exception. These were controversies which arose from claims to have for the professional military officer. They were questions which involved the professional expertise of the military and the military officer. The military officer, regardless of rank, used to have the decision, civilian expertise was welcome in the development of the military officer's weapons or weapons systems.

Another area of friction during this period has been the charge that the civilian leaders within the Department of Defense have used pressure on military officers who held differing opinions on strategy or military policy. The nature of this controversy was further defined during

⁴⁷ ibid., p. 170.

⁴⁸ ibid., p. 170. The issue of strategy, however, was not the same as the issue of strategy. The issue of strategy, however, was not the same as the issue of strategy.

hearings in February, 1966. The following exchange occurred during the discussion about policy acceptance by the Joint Chiefs of Staff:

Senator Thurman. I am glad you brought this matter up. I have had occasion to talk to a number of military people and they do not feel as General Wheeler does. They are his colleagues. Some of them are very high ranking colleagues. They feel that they are under compulsion and duress in this matter. I had occasion to talk to one in the last few days, a rather high ranking officer, several stars, and I don't think there is any question that the public knows that they are muzzled over there. They are under coercion

Chairman Russell. Both of them [Secretary McNamara and General Wheeler] have stated for the record that there was no compulsion

Secretary McNamara. Mr. Chairman, I was going to make that same point. I think this is a serious charge⁴⁹

This discussion of the unification conflict is not meant to imply that a state of hostility exists at all levels within the Department of Defense. The details of conflict have been covered to provide an insight into factors bearing on the military-civilian policy-making system. It should be sufficient to note that whatever conflicts have existed or still exist have not prevented a considerable degree of success in the development of

⁴⁹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Committee on Appropriations, Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, Hearings, 81st Cong., 2d Sess., on S.2950, February 23-March 31, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 230-231.

current during the discussion about policy objectives by the
members in February, 1988. The following evidence is:

They are under control - - -

[illegible]

to make this your point. I think this is a serious
Secretary, however, I am going

This discussion of the relationship conflict is not

considerable degree of success in the development of
links have arisen or still exist have not produced a
system. It would be sufficient to note that whatever con-
factors bearing on the military-civilian policy-making
conflict have been covered to provide an insight into
levels within the Department of Defense. The details of
want to imply that a state of hostility exists at all

NOT READING SECTION 1986A. Pgs. 250-252
on 11/20/93. Bureau 11-2430. 11/20/93. 11/20/93.
Section for Fiscal Year 1991, Meeting, 11/20/93.
Committee on Appropriations, Military Construction, Veterans
Services and Pensions in Department of Defense is the
*United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Labor

national security policy. Yet, the atmosphere surrounding the policy-making system does have an effect on the influence and involvement of the military in the process and should be considered in evaluating the military role.

The next area to be covered will involve the national security policy machinery within which the military operates to affect policy.

II. THE UNIFICATION ACT

The "National Security Act of 1947," as amended, provides the structural machinery for formulating national security policy. It also constitutes the legal foundations for military unification. Inasmuch as any study of military influence on national security policy must, to some degree, concern itself with the institution within which it operates, a brief description of some provisions of the "National Security Act of 1947" will be undertaken.

In section 2 of the Act, Congress explicitly set forth a declaration of policy. The declaration stated that, in providing "for the establishment of integrated policies and procedures for the departments, agencies, and functions of the Government relating to national security" and in establishing a Department of Defense which will include the three military departments, "under the direction, authority, and control of the Secretary of Defense," the merger of the services is prohibited. Instead, the Secretary of Defense

national security policy. Yet, the atmosphere surrounding the policy-making system does have an effect on the latter and involvement of the military in the process and should be considered in evaluating the military role. The next area to be covered will involve the national security policy machinery which the military operates so affect policy.

II. THE EMERGENCY ACT

The National Security Act of 1947, as amended, provides the structural machinery for formulating national security policy. It also constitutes the legal foundation for military utilization. Inasmuch as any study of military influence on national security policy must, to some degree, concern itself with the institutions within which it operates, a brief description of some provisions of the "National Security Act of 1947" will be undertaken. In section 1 of the act, Congress explicitly sets forth a declaration of policy. The declaration states that it is providing "for the establishment of integrated policies and procedures for the departments, agencies, and entities of the Government relating to national security" and in establishing a Department of Defense which will house the three military departments, "under the direction, authority, and control of the Secretary of Defense," the purpose of the act is provided. Indeed, the Secretary of Defense

was charged with the responsibility of providing "unified direction" to the military departments. The declaration further provided "for the establishment of unified or specified combatant commands" and a clearly-defined, direct chain of command for effective operation of these forces. Overall direction and control was vested in the Secretary of Defense in order to "eliminate unnecessary duplication" and "to provide more effective, efficient and economical administration in the Department of Defense." The establishment of a "single Chief of Staff over the Armed Forces" or an Armed Forces General Staff was specifically prohibited.

The Act provided for the establishment of a National Security Council with the function of advising the President "with respect to the integration of domestic, foreign and military policies relating to the national security so as to enable the military services and the other departments and agencies of the government to cooperate more effectively in matters involving the national security." The membership of the council was restricted to the President, Vice President, the Secretaries of Defense and State and the Director, Office of Emergency Planning.

Under the National Security Council, the Central Intelligence Agency was established. The function of C.I.A. was to "coordinate the intelligence activities of the several Government departments in the interest of National

was charged with the responsibility of providing "written
 direction" to the military departments. The direction
 further provided that the establishment of written or speci-
 fied "operational commands" and a clearly-defined, direct
 chain of command for effective operation of these forces.
 Overall direction and control was vested in the Secretary
 of Defense in order to "assign necessary functions
 and to provide such assistance, direction and encouragement
 administration in the Department of Defense." The staff
 consisted of a "single Chief of Staff" over the Army, Navy,
 as an armed force. General Staff was specifically provided
 The act provided for the establishment of a National
 Security Council with the function of advising the Presi-
 dent with respect to the investigation of domestic, foreign
 and military policies relating to the national security so
 as to enable the military services and the other depart-
 ments and agencies of the Government to cooperate more
 effectively in matters involving the national security.
 The membership of the Council was restricted to the Presi-
 dent, Vice President, the Secretary of Defense and State
 and the Director, Office of Emergency Management.
 Under the National Security Council, the Central
 Intelligence Agency was established. The function of C.I.A.
 was to coordinate the intelligence activities of the
 several Government departments in the interest of national

Security" and "to advise the National Security Council in matters concerning such intelligence activities . . . as relate to national security." Additionally, the C.I.A. was charged with the correlation, evaluation, and dissemination of intelligence information as it relates to national security. The agency was also charged with the responsibility of performing "such other functions and duties related to intelligence affecting national security as the National Security Council may from time to time direct." The Director or Deputy Director of the agency was required to be a military officer but, at no time, were both to be from the active or retired list of commissioned officers.

Provision for an Office of Emergency Planning was included in the Act and the function of this office was to advise the President "concerning the coordination of military, industrial, and civilian mobilization."⁵⁰

The first thing that comes to mind after reading the "National Security Act of 1947" is that there is some inconsistency in its phrasing. This ambiguity has caused the Act to be described as "a document that calls simultaneously for 'integration' and 'separation'; for 'unified direction' but not merger; strategic 'integration' but not a unified

⁵⁰ National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., pp. 1-5.
Source of previous five paragraphs.

staff by which this can be accomplished."⁵¹ Yet, the background of the pros and cons of unification indicates that the language of the Act represents fairly accurately the compromise in approaches which were necessary to make any progress in this area.

Unity not Unitarian

As originally instituted, the National Defense Establishment was designed to be more a confederation than a union. This was caused by Congress desiring the best features of both. However, it became readily apparent by the time hearings were conducted on the bill's first amendment in 1949 that, rather than the best of two worlds, many of the evils of each had been acquired. In fact, Secretary of the Army Kenneth C. Royall testified that he believed that the nation had lost ground rather than improved its security posture. This position was taken in spite of the fact that he was a strong advocate of unification and supported a stronger director for the defense effort.⁵²

Each effort to modify the "National Security Act of 1947" resulted in a step toward the merger feared by many Congressmen and military officers. Yet, even to date, the best description of the Department of Defense is unity not

⁵¹Ransom, op. cit., p. 171.

⁵²National Security Act Amendments of 1949, op. cit., pp. 121-182.

stead by which this can be accomplished. ²¹ Yet, the lack-
ground of the work and some of the difficulties involved in
the language of the act represents fairly accurately the
compromise in approaches which were necessary to make any
progress in this area.

Unity not achieved

As originally intended, the National Defense Estab-
lishment was designed to be more a coordination than a
union. This was caused by Congress wanting the best two
courses of action. However, it became really important by the
time hearings were conducted on the bill's first amendment
in 1949 that, rather than the best of two worlds, many of
the wits of men and laws collapsed. In fact, Secretary of
the Army Kenneth G. Royall testified that he believed that
the action was just ground rather than improved in security
posture. This position was taken in light of the fact that
he was a strong advocate of unification and supported a
stronger director for the defense effort. ²²

Each effort to unify the National Security Act of
1947 resulted in a bill which was rejected by many
Congressmen and military officials. Yet, even so late, the
best description of the movement of defense is that it

²¹ "The National Security Act of 1947," p. 177.

²² "National Security Act of 1947," p. 177.

unitarian. This condition is specifically structured by the provisions of the "National Security Act of 1947" and Title 10, United States Code, sections 125 and 133.

The Secretary of Defense "is the head of the Department of Defense" and "is the principal assistant to the President in all matters relating to the Department of Defense." Although specific powers to consolidate functions within the Department were granted in order to eliminate duplication and "to provide more effective efficient, and economical administration and operation . . . in the Department of Defense," it was also stated that any "function, power or duty invested in the Department of Defense, or an officer, official or agency thereof, by law may not be substantially transferred, consolidated, or abolished" until the proposal has been made to Congress. Congress then has thirty days in which to disapprove an undesirable Act.

Within the provisions for the military departments, the same type structure was sought. The military departments were separately organized under their own Secretary, but they were specifically charged to operate "under the authority, direction, and control of the Secretary of Defense." Each service secretary retained the right "to make such recommendations to Congress relating to the Department of Defense as they consider necessary," but this

understand. This condition is specifically structured by the provisions in the National Security Act of 1947 and this is, United States Code, sections 137 and 138.

The Secretary of Defense is the head of the Department of Defense, and is the principal assistant to the President in all matters relating to the Department of Defense. Although specific powers are conferred upon him within the Department and granted in order to eliminate duplication and to provide more effective efficient, and economical administration and operation . . . in the Department of Defense, it was also stated that any "transfer, power or duty involved in the Department of Defense, or an official, official or agency thereof, by law may not be substantially transferred, consolidated, or abolished until the proposal has been made to Congress. Congress then has thirty days in which to disapprove an undesirable act.

Within the provisions for the military departments, the same type structure was sought. The military departments were separately organized under their own authority, but they were specifically charged to operate under the authority, direction, and control of the Secretary of Defense. Each service secretary retained the right to make such recommendations to Congress relating to the Department of Defense as they consider necessary, but this

provision required that the Secretary of Defense be informed before recommendations were made.

The Secretary of Defense, under the President, was charged with the responsibility of establishing "unified combatant commands or specified combatant commands to perform military missions" and he was further empowered to "prescribe the force structure of those commands." This power was limited only by the stipulation that the Joint Chiefs of Staff would advise and assist in the establishment of commands and that the service departments were responsible for the assignment and training of the forces which comprise the various unified commands. The combatant commands were made directly "responsible to the President and the Secretary for such military missions as may be assigned" by "the Secretary with the approval of the President."⁵³

Centralized Control

One of the age-old fears of Congress and the public has been the threat presented to democratic government by a monolithic military organization. It was this aspect of unification which delayed action in the progress toward consolidation until 1947 and which is still the central point of criticism of the Department of Defense.

⁵³ National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., pp. 7-13. Also refers to previous three paragraphs.

provision required that the Secretary of Defense be the
 focus of all communications with the
 the Secretary of Defense, under the President, and
 changed also the responsibility of establishing "military
 command" commands or specified commands to per-
 form military missions, and the President reported to
 "prescribe the force structure of those commands." This
 power was limited only by the stipulation that the Joint
 Chiefs of Staff could advise and assist in the establish-
 ment of commands and that the service departments were
 responsible for the assignment and training of the forces
 which composed the various unified commands. The commands
 were made directly responsible to the President
 and the Secretary for such military missions as may be
 assigned by the Secretary with the approval of the Presi-
 dent.

Centralized Control

One of the age-old fears of Congress and the public
 has been the threat presented to democratic government by a
 monolithic military organization. It was this fear of
 militarism which delayed action in the progress toward
 consolidation until 1947 and which is still the central
 point of attack of the Department of Defense.

¹ National Security Act of 1947, ch. 352, 60 Stat. 1712.
 Also referred to as the National Security Act.

There can be little doubt that the present organization for national defense has centralized control of the military departments and their functions. The centralization of control was heavily invested in the Secretary of Defense, explicitly and implicitly, by the "National Security Act of 1947." In addition to those aspects previously mentioned, the Secretary of Defense was made chairman of the Armed Forces Policy Council "with the power of decision." The Joint Chiefs of Staff were established as "the principal advisors to the President, the National Security Council and the Secretary of Defense" *[italics added]*⁷. The director of the Joint Chiefs of Staff was appointed with the approval of the Secretary. The Secretary of Defense also controlled the combined budget of the Defense Department.⁵⁴

The ready military power of the nation has been centralized into the unified command system specified by the "National Security Act of 1947" by answering to the Secretary of Defense via the Joint Chiefs of Staff.⁵⁵ The unified commands presently consist of the Alaskan, Atlantic, Continental Air Defense, European, Pacific, Southern, Strategic Air, and Strike Commands.⁵⁶ The Secretary of Defense

⁵⁴ Ibid., pp. 13-21.

⁵⁵ Ibid., pp. 12 and 19.

⁵⁶ Office of the Federal Register, United States Government Organization Manual 1966-67 (Washington:

has several primary assistants who have the function of coordinating the efforts of the Defense Department.

Civilian Supremacy Reinforced

As previously discussed, some fear had been generated over the prospects of a single, consolidated armed force. This fear was centered on the "Man on Horseback" theory by some and on the "captured" civilian Secretary by the all-powerful military by others. These fears have not been realized in relation to the military gaining increased control. "In actual fact," writes Huntington, "the power of the military professions 'in the councils of government' has decreased steadily since World War II."⁵⁷ That power which the military previously held has been assumed by the civilian Secretary and, in addition, other powers created by the integration of military-political influences in nation security policy have been civilianized. As a specific example, it has been said that "the Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Affairs is the one most directly related to the overall organization for national security."⁵⁸ And this office has

Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 611. Hereafter referred to as Government Organization Manual.

⁵⁷ Samuel P. Huntington, "Power Expertise and the Military Profession," American Defense Policy, op. cit., p. 186.

⁵⁸ Stanley, op. cit., p. 45.

has several military assistants who have the function of coordinating the activities of the defense department.

Civilian Security Situation

As previously discussed, some time has been spent over the prospects of a single, consolidated armed force. This has been considered on the basis of the "theory" of some and on the "reality" of the military secretary by the powerful military by others. These facts have not been realized in relation to the military gained increased control. In actual fact, "civilian" function, the power of the military profession is the compass of government, has decreased steadily since World War II.²⁷ That power which the military previously held has been assumed by the civilian secretary and, in addition, other powers created by the integration of military-political influences in civilian security policy have been civilised. As a specific example, it has been said that "the Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Affairs is the one most directly related to the overall organization for civilian security."²⁸ And this office has

²⁷ Government Printing Office, 1964, p. 111. Referred to in Government Organization Manual.

²⁸ General A. B. Thompson, "Power Expansion and the Military Profession," Journal of the American Military Association, 1964, p. 107.

²⁹ Thompson, op. cit., p. 107.

only one military officer as a principal official versus seven civilian Deputy Assistant Secretaries.⁵⁹

By the insertion of the Secretary of Defense above the service secretaries, another level of civilian leadership was placed between the military departments and the prime policy maker, the President. By the same token, individual military leaders, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, have been denied access to the policy-making machinery except through the Secretary of Defense. This is not meant to imply that the military influence in the formulation of national security policy has been radically degraded. It does mean that military influence has been made subject to civilian review and control and, therefore, civilian supremacy has been strengthened.

III. DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

The Department of Defense is, perhaps, the most important functionary in the national security process. This department is comprised of all military and civilian government agencies which are directly concerned with the nation's military posture.⁶⁰ In addition to involvement in strictly military strategy, the Department of Defense maintains

⁵⁹Government Organization Manual, op. cit., p. 133.

⁶⁰Ibid., pp. 137-145 and 611.

only one military officer as a principal official representative of the military in the Department of Defense.

By the insertion of the Secretary of Defense above the service secretaries, another level of civilian leadership was placed between the military secretaries and the prime policy maker, the President. At the same time, individual military leaders, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, have been denied access to the policy-making machinery except through the Secretary of Defense. This is not meant to imply that the military influence in the formulation of national security policy has been radically degraded. It does mean that military influence has been made subject to civilian review and control and, therefore, civilian government has been strengthened.

III. DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

The Department of Defense is, perhaps, the most important functionary in the national security process. This department is composed of all military and civilian government agencies which are directly concerned with the nation's military posture.⁵⁰ In addition to involvement in orderly military strategy, the Department of Defense maintains

⁵⁰ Department of Defense Manual, 28-411.4-9-111.

⁵¹ ibid., pp. 117-118 and 111.

liaison with other governmental agencies concerned with defense policy in its broadest connotations. The need for effective organization and coordination readily becomes apparent when the full scope of the department's efforts are examined.

Organizational Aspects

An organization chart of the Department of Defense, Figure 1, is provided on the following page. This chart will be referred to in the following analysis of the Department of Defense organization.

The Office of the Secretary of Defense was organized to supervise and coordinate the many agencies and departments which make up the Department of Defense. This office was originally envisioned as a lightly-staffed executive group. Initial estimates of staffing requirements indicated that, in addition to the Joint Chiefs of Staff, only four special assistants and one hundred civilian clerical and administrative personnel would be required to staff the office.⁶¹ This concept, based on limited functions, rapidly became outmoded as the executive and administrative responsibilities of the Secretary increased. As of October 31, 1966, the total number of civilian personnel utilized in the office of the Secretary of Defense was 2,584. There

⁶¹National Defense Establishment, op. cit., p. 502.

liaison with other governmental agencies concerned with defense policy in the broadest sense. The need for effective organization and coordination readily becomes apparent when the full scope of the department's efforts are examined.

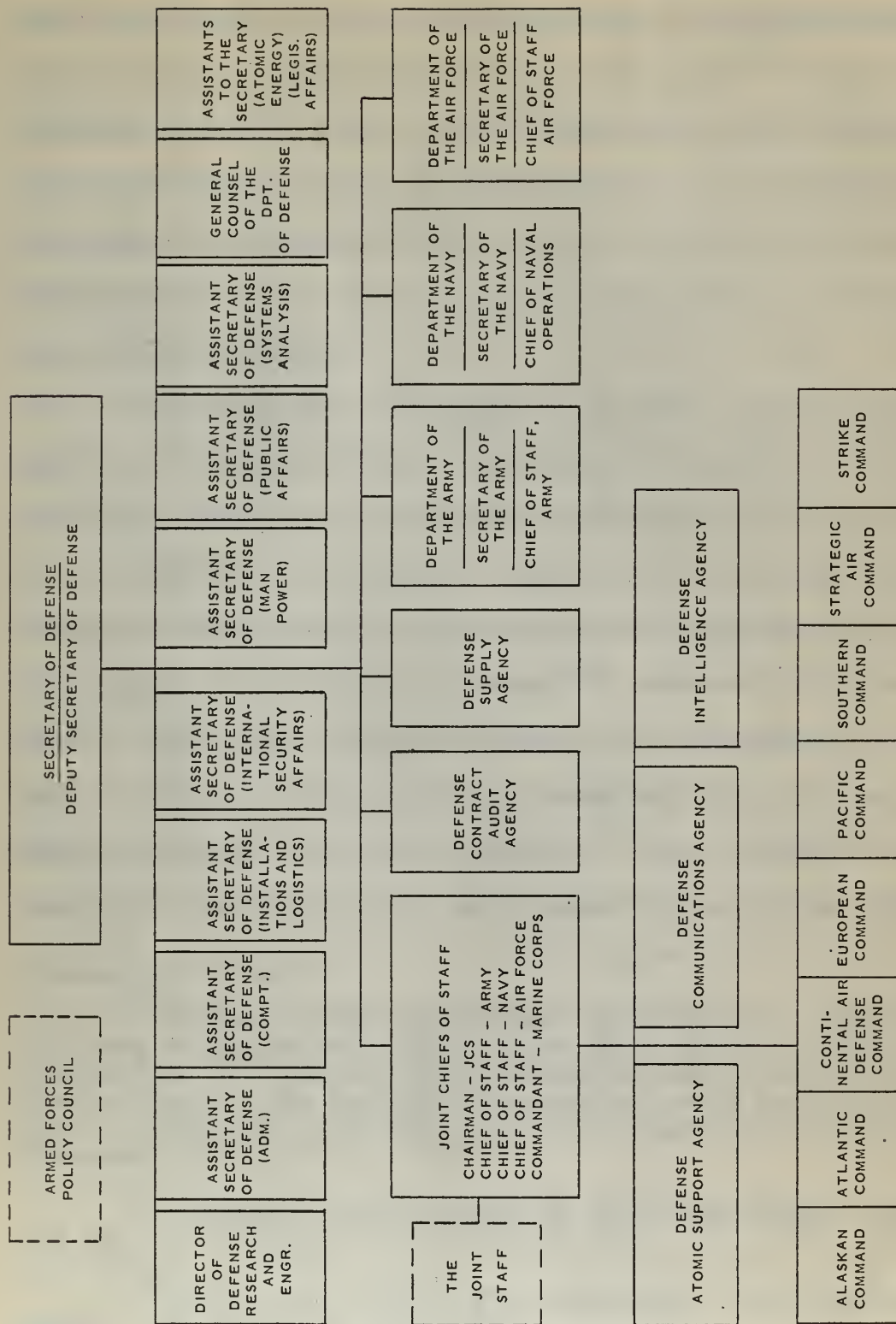
Organizational Aspects

An organizational chart of the Department of Defense, Figure 1, is provided on the following page. This chart will be referred to in the following analysis of the Department of Defense organization.

The office of the Secretary of Defense was organized to supervise and coordinate the many agencies and departments which make up the Department of Defense. This office was originally envisioned as a lightly-staffed executive group. Initial estimates of staffing requirements indicated that, in addition to the Joint Chiefs of Staff, only four special assistants and one hundred civilian clerical and administrative personnel would be required to staff the office.⁶¹ This concept, based on limited functions, rapidly became abandoned as the executive and administrative responsibilities of the Secretary increased. As of October 31, 1966, the total number of civilian personnel utilized in the office of the Secretary of Defense was 1,294. There

⁶¹ Organizational Aspects, pp. 111, p. 101.

Figure 1. DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE ORGANIZATION CHART from Government Organization Manual, p. 611



were also 2,856 military officers and enlisted men assigned to the various assistants to the Secretary.⁶² This figure excludes those military and civilian personnel assigned to the Joint Staff. This manifold increase in personnel requirements represented the increased scope, functions, and authority vested in the Assistant Secretaries of Defense and agency directors.

The "National Security Act of 1947" specifically made all assistants to the Secretary of Defense, other than the Deputy Secretary of Defense, subordinate in precedence to the service Secretaries. These assistants were also denied decision-making authority on the grounds that they were administrators and advisers.⁶³ However, this restriction on power was circumscribed by the delegation of authority clause and through the practical assumption of necessary power to enforce policy.⁶⁴ The pragmatic functioning of the Department of Defense organization worked to

⁶²United States Department of Defense, "Civilian and Military Personnel--Office of the Department of Defense," Directorate for Statistical Services, OSD, 1 December 1966. Working papers for budget preparation, copy held by candidate. Hereafter referred to as "Civilian and Military Personnel."

⁶³National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., pp. 13-14 and 68.

⁶⁴Ibid., pp. 15-17; and Government Organization Manual, op. cit., pp. 207-214.

were also 3,656 military officers and enlisted men assigned to the various assistants to the Secretary.⁶³ This figure excludes those military and civilian personnel assigned to the Joint Staff. This manifold increase in personnel requirements represented the increased scope, functions, and authority vested in the Assistant Secretaries of Defense and agency directors.

The "National Security Act of 1947" specifically made all assistants to the Secretary of Defense, other than the Deputy Secretary of Defense, subordinate in precedence to the service secretaries. These assistants were also denied decision-making authority on the grounds that they were administrators and advisers.⁶⁴ However, this restriction on power was circumvented by the delegation of authority clause and through the practical assumption of necessary power to enforce policy.⁶⁵ The pragmatic function of the Department of Defense organization worked to

⁶³ United States Department of Defense, "Civilian and Military Personnel—Office of the Department of Defense," Directorate for Statistical Services, OSD, 1 December 1968. Working papers for budget preparation, copy held by RAND. Material related to as "Civilian and Military Personnel."

⁶⁴ National Security Act of 1947, sec. 216, pp. 11-14 and 68.

⁶⁵ Id., pp. 15-17 and Government Organization Manual, sec. 217, pp. 107-114.

relegate the service Secretaries to an equal position as that recognized for the unified agency heads. The primary difference retained was a matter of prestige and status which resulted from the requirement of Presidential appointment and the dubious distinction of authority to go direct to Congress.

Another factor which the organization chart fails to represent is the blurring of function and authority caused by dual responsibilities of some officials. For instance, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, while in their capacity of military advisers to the Secretary and members of the Armed Forces Policy Council, operate as an integral part of the Office of the Secretary of Defense. In their capacity as unified combatant force commanders and military strategy formulators, the Joint Chiefs and their staff occupy a level outside of, but immediately under, the Office of the Secretary of Defense. The Joint Chiefs, by virtue of yet a third function, being the military commanders within the three service departments, occupy a position in the hierarchy below their respective service Secretaries.⁶⁵

Administrative Responsibilities

The administrative responsibilities within the Department of Defense were, to a great degree, responsible

⁶⁵Government Organization Manual, op. cit., pp. 145-146 and 611-614.

relates the service structure to an equal position as that recognized for the unified agency heads. The primary difference retained was a matter of prestige and status which resulted from the requirement of Presidential appointment and the dubious distinction of authority to go direct to Congress.

Another factor which the organization chart fails to represent is the differing of function and authority owned by dual responsibilities of some officials. For instance, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, while in their capacity of military advisors to the Secretary and members of the Armed Forces Policy Council, operate as an integral part of the Office of the Secretary of Defense. In their capacity as unified command force commanders and military strategy formulators, the Joint Chiefs and their staff occupy a level outside of, but immediately under, the Office of the Secretary of Defense. The Joint Chiefs, by virtue of yet a third function, being the military commanders within the three service departments, occupy a position in the hierarchy below their respective service secretaries.⁶²

Administrative Responsibilities

The administrative responsibilities within the Department of Defense were, to a great degree, responsible

for the increased size of the Office of the Secretary of Defense. Although many of the administrative functions remained with the existing departments and agencies, the problems of control and coordination vastly expanded both the civilian and military staffs of the Secretary. The main areas of administration envisioned by the "National Security Act of 1947" concerned possible economies which would be made possible through unification. The primary areas were perceived in budget matters and procurement.⁶⁶ However, as the Office of the Secretary evolved into a bureaucracy in its own right, administration requirements at all levels were increased proportionally.

Today, the Assistant Secretary of Defense for Administration employs 396 military and civilian personnel in coping with his administrative responsibilities.⁶⁷ The administrative responsibilities which have accrued to other, and supposedly more immune, assistant Secretaries can be interpolated from available data. As an example, the Director Research and Engineering testified before Congress that he had 103 civilians and 47 military officers who performed technical functions in his office.⁶⁸ At the same

⁶⁶National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., pp. 14, 27 and 29.

⁶⁷"Civilian and Military Personnel," loc. cit.

⁶⁸United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed

the increased size of the office of the Secretary of Defense. Although many of the administrative functions remained with the existing departments and agencies, the problems of control and coordination easily expanded both the civilian and military aspects of the Secretary. The main areas of administration envisioned by the National Security Act of 1947 concerned possible operations which would be made possible through unification. The primary areas were perceived in budget matters and procurement. However, as the office of the Secretary evolved into a bureaucracy in its own right, administration responsibilities at all levels were increased progressively. Today, the Assistant Secretary of Defense for Administration employs 300 military and civilian personnel in working with his administrative responsibilities.⁸⁷ The administrative responsibilities which have accrued to other and supposedly were limited, assistant secretaries can be distinguished from civilian staff. As an example, the Director Research and Engineering assisted before Congress that he had 100 civilians and 47 military officers who performed technical functions in his office.⁸⁸ As the same

⁸⁸ National Security Act of 1947, pp. 14-15.

⁸⁷ and 74.

⁸⁶ "Civilian and Military Personnel," pp. 21-22.

⁸⁵ Official Staff Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed

time, the total personnel assigned to this office were in excess of five hundred people.⁶⁹ The story is much the same with all offices in the Department of Defense.

The administrative responsibilities of the Department of Defense are an important area through which military influence can be directed to affect the national security policy process. Policy goals, by nature, are expressed in general terms and can be shaded through administrative interpretation. The administrative process also determines, to a great degree, where and how the military defense funds will be spent through procurement procedures and contract determination.

Coordination of Policy Planning

Probably the most vital issue confronting the national security policy process concerns coordination. Although this problem is applicable to the internal machinations of the Department of Defense, in-house difficulties can be resolved by fiat and, therefore, are not of predominant significance. The primary policy coordination problems have been of inter-departmental nature. This has been

Services, Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year 1964, Hearings, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., on H.R. 2440 (S.843), February 19-March 8, 1963 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963), pp. 452-453.

⁶⁹"Civilian and Military Personnel," loc. cit.

slowly, the total personnel assigned to this office were in excess of five hundred people.⁶⁷ The story is that the same with all offices in the Department of Defense. The administrative responsibilities of the Department of Defense are an important area through which military influence can be directed to affect the national security policy process. Policy goals, by nature, are expressed in general terms and can be shaped through administrative interpretation. The administrative process also determines, to a great degree, where and how the military defense funds will be spent through procurement procedures and contract administration.

Coordination of Policy Planning

Probably the most vital issue confronting the national security policy process concerns coordination. Although this problem is applicable to the internal mechanisms of the Department of Defense, it has more difficulties can be resolved by fiat and, therefore, are not of profound significance. The primary policy coordination problems have been of inter-departmental nature. This has been

⁶⁷ Review, Military Procurement Administration, Fiscal Year 1964, Hearing, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., on H.R. 2440 (2-1-63), February 19-20 March 5, 1963 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963), pp. 421-423.

⁶⁸ Civilian and Military Personnel, loc. cit.

particularly true between the two policy-making departments, Defense and State.

The problem of coordinating military and foreign policy were recognized by President Truman and constituted the primary reason that he desired unification.⁷⁰ The "National Security Act of 1947" tackled the problem of policy coordination through the establishment of the National Security Council. This organization was designed to integrate military, domestic, and foreign policy at the highest levels. However, it rapidly became apparent that the problem of coordination was more critical and required greater attention at lower levels than the National Security Council. Therefore, the Operations Coordinating Board was established by Executive Order 10483 of September 2, 1953. The function of this board was "to assist in effective coordination among certain agencies of certain functions relating to national security and to provide for integrated implementations of national security policies by these agencies."⁷¹

The Operations Coordinating Board remained the primary instrument, in name if not in fact, for resolving policy disputes until 1961. McGeorge Bundy speaking of the

⁷⁰ Millis, op. cit., pp. 119-120.

⁷¹ Government Organization Manual, op. cit., p. 689.

particularly close between the two policy-making departments, Defense and State.

The problem of coordinating military and foreign policy were recognized by President Truman and constituted the primary reason that he desired unification.⁷⁰ The "National Security Act of 1947" tackled the problem of policy coordination through the establishment of the National Security Council. This organization was designed to integrate military, domestic, and foreign policy at the highest level. However, it rapidly became apparent that the problem of coordination was more critical and required greater attention at lower levels than the National Security Council. Therefore, the Operations Coordinating Board was established by Executive Order 10481 on September 1, 1953. The function of this board was "to assist in effective coordination among certain agencies of certain functions relating to national security and to provide for integrated implementation of national security policies by these agencies."⁷¹

The Operations Coordinating Board remained the main instrument, in name it is not in fact, for resolving policy disputes until 1961. McGeorge Bundy speaking of the

⁷⁰ Miller, *op. cit.*, pp. 119-120.

⁷¹ Government Organization Manual, *op. cit.*, p. 287.

board's abolishment by President Kennedy said its primary failure was attributable to the indecisiveness of the membership and that "the decisive difficulty in the OCB was that without unanimity it had no authority."⁷² The President determined that the functions of the Operations Coordinating Board could be better performed by dealing directly with the departments concerned and by strengthening the Secretary of State.⁷³

The Kennedy Administration relied, to a great extent, on the "task group" concept and ad hoc committees to solve policy coordination problems. President Johnson transferred many of these functions to the Secretary of State and his regional Assistant Secretaries. This system was formalized by President Johnson in a White House announcement on March 4, 1966. The Secretary of State, as the President's agent was charged with the responsibility of coordinating all interdepartmental matters affecting national security policy. The announcement further revealed the creation of two new instruments to allow effective

⁷²United States Congress, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected Papers, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1962), p. 6.

⁷³Ibid., p. 3.

board's abolition by President Kennedy and its primary
 failure was attributable to the indecisiveness of the mem-
 bership and that "the decisive difficulty in the OCM was
 that without unanimity it had no authority."⁷² The Presi-
 dent determined that the functions of the Operations Co-
 ordinating Board could be better performed by dealing
 directly with the departments concerned and by strengthen-
 ing the necessity of State.⁷³

The Kennedy Administration found, to a great extent,
 on the "task group" concept and as you can see to solve
 policy coordination problems. President Johnson's
 feared many of these functions to the necessity of State
 and his reaction against decentralization. This system was
 formulated by President Johnson in a White House announce-
 ment on March 4, 1965. The Secretary of State as the
 President's agent was charged with the responsibility of
 coordinating all interdepartmental matters affecting
 national security policy. The announcement further revealed
 the creation of two new instruments to allow effective

⁷² United States Congress, Committee on Government
 Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected
 Papers, prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security
 Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d sess., Committee
 Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961),
 p. 6.

⁷³ Ibid., p. 1.

coordination of policy--the Senior Interdepartmental Group (SIG) and Interdepartmental Regional Group (IRG). The character and purpose of the Senior Interdepartmental Group was made evident by the statement:

To assist the Secretary of State in this new role, there will be a permanent interdepartmental committee, called the Senior Interdepartmental Group (SIG), with the Under Secretary of State as its "Executive Chairman." The latter term is used to describe a chairman who has the authority and responsibility to decide all matters coming before his committee, subject to the right of any member to appeal his decision to higher authority. This is an important provision which makes the difference between the normal committee and an incisive, decision making body.

The other regular members of the Senior Interdepartmental Group are: the Deputy Secretary of Defense, the Administrator of AID, the Director of CIA, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, the Director of USIA, and the Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs.⁷⁴

The Interdepartmental Regional Groups were established at a lower level, using the regional Assistant Secretaries of State as Executive Chairmen, in order to relieve the Senior Interdepartmental Group of the large volume of work required. In all cases, the Chairmen have the decision making responsibility when considering split issues.⁷⁵

⁷⁴United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, The Secretary of State and the Problem of Coordination: New Duties and Procedures of March 4, 1966, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 1.

⁷⁵Ibid., pp. 2 and 8.

coordination of policy--the Senior Interdepartmental Group (SIRG) and Interdepartmental Regional Group (IRG). The character and purpose of the Senior Interdepartmental Group was made evident by the statement:

"In making the Secretary of State in this role, there will be a permanent Interdepartmental Committee, called the Senior Interdepartmental Group (SIRG), with the Senior Secretary of State as its Executive Chairman. The latter will be responsible to describe a Chairman who has the authority and responsibility to make all matters pending before his committee, subject to the right of any member to appeal his decision on higher authority. This is an important provision which makes the difference between the normal committee and an initiative decision making body.

The other regular members of the Senior Interdepartmental Group are: the Deputy Secretary of State, the Administrator of AID, the Director of CIA, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, the Director of NSA, and the Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs."

The Interdepartmental Regional Groups were established at a lower level, using the regional assistant secretaries of state as Executive Chairmen, in order to relieve the Senior Interdepartmental Group of the large volume of work required. In all cases, the Chairmen have the decision making responsibility when considering split issues.⁷⁵

⁷⁵United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, The Secretary of State and the Problem of Coordination: New Rules and Procedures of the State Department, 96th Cong., 1st Sess., 1979, prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 96th Cong., 1st Sess., Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1979), p. 1.

Within the Department of Defense, the Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Affairs is charged with:

Developing and coordinating Defense positions, policies, plans, and procedures in the fields of international politico-military and foreign economic affairs, including disarmament, of interest to the Department of Defense and with respect to negotiating and monitoring of agreements with foreign governments and international organizations on military facilities, operating rights, status of forces, and other international politico-military matters
⁷⁶

Therefore, this office was charged with all liaison between the Joint Chiefs and their military policy and the State Department or other outside agency. It is interesting to note that the function of the International Security Affairs office in the area of politico-military appears to parallel the position which President Kennedy implied for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In a letter to the Joint Chiefs in June, 1961, the President said:

While I look to the Chiefs to present the military factor without reserve or hesitation, I regard them to be more than military men and expect their help in fitting military requirements into the overall contest of any situation, recognizing that the most difficult problem in Government is to combine all assets in a unified, effective pattern.⁷⁷

⁷⁶Government Organization Manual, op. cit., p. 141.

⁷⁷United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operation, Administration of National Security, Hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., June 25, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 553. Quoted in a

within the Department of Defense, the Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Affairs is

charged with:

—developing and coordinating defense policies, policies, plans, and procedures in the field of international politico-military and foreign economic affairs, including disarmament, or interest in the Department of Defense and with respect to negotiating and monitoring of agreements with foreign governments and international organizations on military facilities, operating rights, status of forces, and other international politico-military matters.

Thereafter, this office was charged with all liaison between the Joint Chiefs and their military policy and the State Department on other outside agency. It is interesting to note that the function of the International Security Affairs office in the area of politico-military affairs parallels the position which President Kennedy implied for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In a letter to the Joint Chiefs in June, 1961, the President said:

While I look to the Chiefs to represent the military factor without reserve on questions, I regard them to be more than military men and expect their help in fitting military requirements into the overall context of any situation, recognizing that the most difficult problem in Government is to combine all assets in a unified, effective pattern.⁷⁶

⁷⁶ Government Organization Manual, pp. 111-112.

⁷⁷ United States Congress, House, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 89th Cong., 2d sess., June 22, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 233. Cited in a

IV. THE JOINT CHIEFS OF STAFF

The "National Security Act of 1947" formalized by statute the existence of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and made the provision for the Joint Chiefs of Staff to assist in the formulation of military strategy. As previously noted, the Joint Chiefs were assigned both advisory and operational functions.

Inasmuch as the Joint Chiefs represent the primary, direct influence of the military in the formulation and implementation of national military strategy, their institutionalized functions and organization are significant to this study.

Functions of JCS

As previously noted, the Joint Chiefs requested and received legal recognition of their primary functions during hearings on the first amendment to the "National Security Act" in 1949.⁷⁸ These functions were made explicit by Article 141 (d) which stated:

Subject to the authority and direction of the President and the Secretary of Defense, the Joint Chiefs of Staff shall--(1) prepare strategic plans and provide for the strategic direction of the armed forces; (2) prepare joint logistic plans and assign

speech made by General Maxwell Taylor in February, 1964, to the American Bar Association.

⁷⁸See supra, pp. 62-63, and fn. 29.

THE JOINT CHIEFS OF STAFF

The "National Security Act of 1947" provided by statute the existence of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and gave the provision for the Joint Chiefs of Staff to assist in the formulation of military strategy. As previously noted, the Joint Chiefs were assigned both advisory and operational functions.

Inasmuch as the Joint Chiefs represent the primary direct influence of the military in the formulation and implementation of national military strategy, their institutional functions and organization are significant to this study.

Functions of JCS

As previously noted, the Joint Chiefs received legal recognition of their primary functions during hearings on the first amendments to the "National Security Act" in 1947. These functions were made explicit by Article 111 (1) which stated:

subject to the Secretary and direction of the President and the Secretary of Defense, the Joint Chiefs of Staff shall: (1) prepare strategic plans and provide for the strategic direction of the armed forces; (2) prepare joint logistic plans and assign

specific tasks to several major regions in conformity with the American War Association.

logistic responsibilities to the armed forces in accordance with those plans; (3) establish unified commands in strategic areas; (4) review the major material and personnel requirements of the armed forces in accordance with strategic and logistic plans; (5) formulate policies for the joint training of the armed forces; (6) formulate policies for coordinating the military education of members of the armed forces; (7) provide for representation of the United States on the Military Staff Committee of the United Nations in accordance with the Charter of the United Nations; and (8) perform such other duties as the President or the Secretary of Defense may describe.⁷⁹

Among the "other duties," accepted by direction or precedence, were to:

Provide guidance to the individual departments in the preparation of their respective detailed plans; . . . prepare joint plans for military mobilization; . . . recommend to the Secretary of Defense the establishment and force structure of unified and specified commands; Reviews the plans and programs of these commands to determine their adequacy, feasibility, and suitability; . . . prepare plans, policies, reports and directives in matters pertaining to the Military Assistance Program . . . advise the Secretary of Defense on broad integrated research and development programs.⁸⁰

Organizational Aspects

The composition and hierarchal position of the Joint Chiefs of Staff were previously covered in the discussion of the Defense Department. However, the scope of the Joint Chiefs' functions and responsibilities can be better

⁷⁹ National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., p. 19.

⁸⁰ Jack D. Nicholas et al., The Joint and Combined Staff Officers Manual (Harrisburg, Pennsylvania: The Stackpole Company, 1959), pp. 22-23.

logistic responsibilities to the armed forces in accordance with those plans; (3) establish unified commands in strategic areas; (4) review the major material and personnel requirements of the armed forces in accordance with strategic and logistic plans; (5) formulate policies for the joint planning of the armed forces; (6) formulate policies for coordinating the military education of members of the armed forces; (7) provide for representation of the United States on the Military Staff Committee of the United Nations in accordance with the Charter of the United Nations; and (8) perform such other duties as the President or the Secretary of Defense may prescribe.

Among the other duties, accepted by direction of

precedence, were to:

provide guidance to the individual departments in the preparation of their respective detailed plans; . . . prepare joint plans for military mobilization; . . . recommend to the Secretary of Defense the establishment and force structure of unified and specified commands; . . . Review the plans and programs of these commands to determine their quality, feasibility, and suitability; . . . prepare plans, policies, reports and directives in matters pertaining to the Military Assistance Program . . . advise the Secretary of Defense on broad integrated research and development programs.

Organizational Aspects

The composition and hierarchical position of the Joint Chiefs of Staff were previously covered in the discussion of the various departments. However, the scope of the Joint Chiefs' functions and responsibilities can be better

⁷ National Security Act of 1947, pp. 212, 2-18.
⁸ Joint Chiefs of Staff, The Joint and Combined Staffs of the United States, The Joint Chiefs of Staff, 1951, pp. 22-23.

appreciated from the organizational chart, Figure 2, which is provided on the following page.⁸¹

The primary support for the Joint Chiefs of Staff, in the area of military strategy and policy, was provided by the assignment of the Joint Staff. The efforts of the Joint Staff were to be coordinated and guided by the Director of the Joint Staff who, in turn, was to be managed by the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs. All duties undertaken by the Staff were to be prescribed by the Joint Chiefs or the Chairman.⁸² The Staff was organized on a joint service basis and along functional lines. The conventional staff divisions consisted of J1 Personnel Directorate, J2 Intelligence Directorate, J3 Operations Directorate, J4 Logistics Directorate, J5 Plans and Policy Directorate, J6 Communications Electronics Directorate, a Military Assistance Directorate, a Joint Programs Office, and a Joint Advanced Study Group.⁸³

Although the military composition of the Joint Staff was originally limited to one hundred officers, this number

⁸¹ Sources for constructing Joint Chiefs of Staff organization chart were Government Organization Manual, op. cit., pp. 611 and 145-146; The Joint and Combined Staff Officers Manual, op. cit., p. 25; and a working organizational chart of the Department of Defense utilized within the Office of Naval Operations, copy held by candidate.

⁸² National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., p. 20.

⁸³ Nicholas, op. cit., p. 25.

appreciated from the organizational chart, Figure 3, which is provided on the following page.⁸¹

The primary support for the Joint Chiefs of Staff, in the area of military strategy and policy, was provided by the assignment of the Joint Staff. The efforts of the Joint Staff were to be coordinated and guided by the

Director of the Joint Staff who, in turn, was to be assisted by the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs. All duties undertaken by the staff were to be prescribed by the Joint Chiefs or the Chairman.⁸² The staff was organized on a joint service

basis and along functional lines. The organizational staff division consisted of 11 functional directorates, 12 functional directorates, 13 Operations Directorates, 14 Logistics Directorates, 15 Plans and Policy Directorates, 16 Communications Directorates, 17 Military Assistance Directorates, 18 Joint Program Office, and a Joint Services Study Group.⁸³

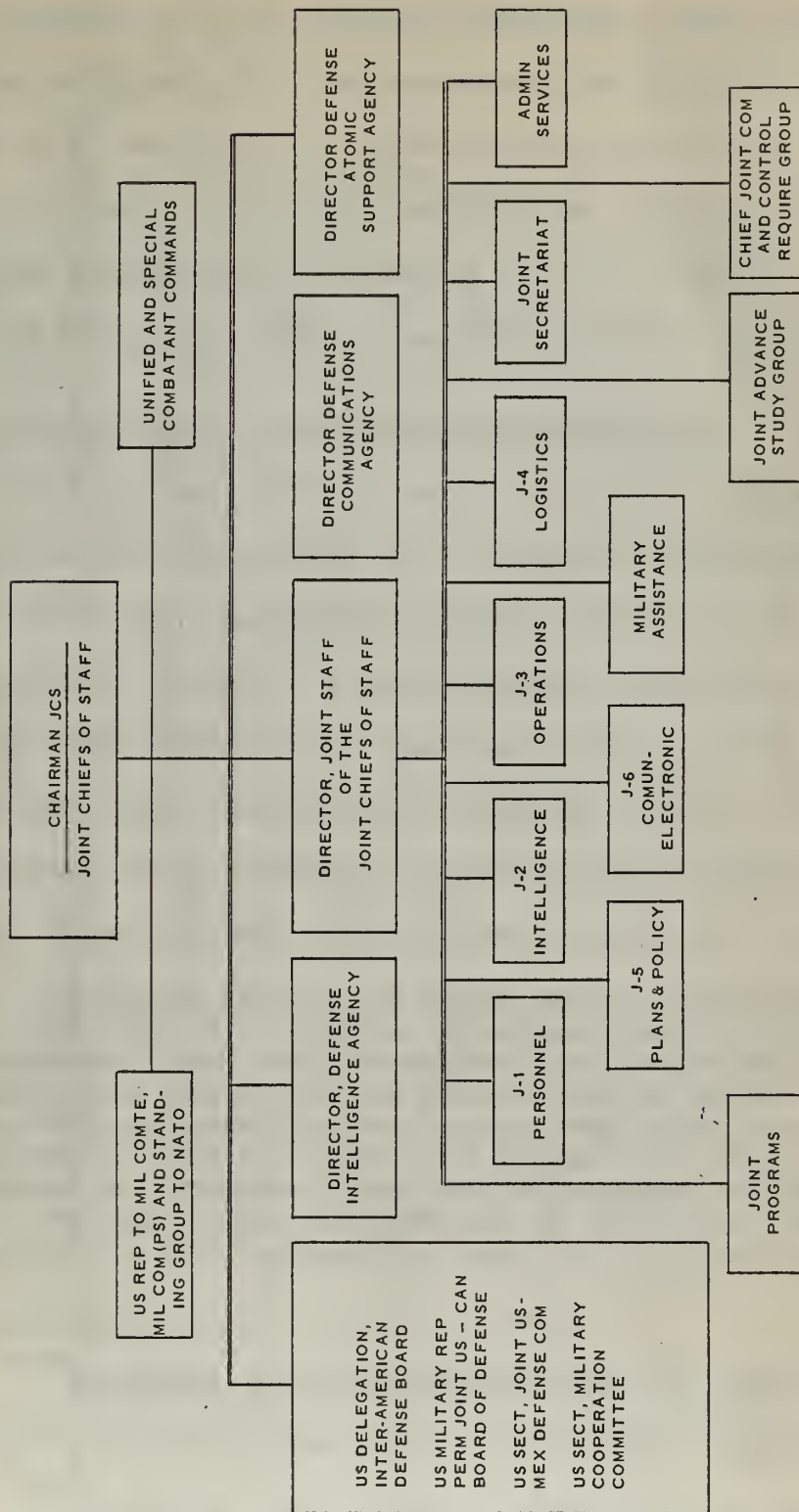
Although the military composition of the Joint Staff was originally limited to one hundred officers, this number

⁸¹ Source for constructing Joint Chiefs of Staff organization chart were Government Organization Manual, GP-25, pp. 411 and 443-446; The Joint and Combined Staff Officers Manual, GP-25, p. 15; and a working organizational chart of the Department of Defense utilized within the Office of Naval Operations, copy held by candidate.

⁸² National Security Act of 1947, GP-25, p. 50.

⁸³ Manual, GP-25, p. 55.

Figure 2. JOINT CHIEFS OF STAFF ORGANIZATION



was increased to its present statutory limit of four hundred officers.⁸⁴ The personnel strength of the Joint Staff as of October 31, 1966, consisted of 432 military and 224 civilians. The total employment for all Joint Chiefs of Staff activities, including the Joint Staff, consists of 1,289 military personnel and 459 civilian employees.⁸⁵

Criticisms of the Joint Chiefs Organization

The primary criticism of the Joint Chiefs of Staff has concerned the nature of "committee" decision. The requirement for unanimity to give high credence or prestige to decisions leads to a considerable degree of policy dilution through compromise which may not be in the best interest of national security.⁸⁶ General Taylor, speaking from experience, very candidly described this aspect of weakness in the Joint Chiefs' nature when he said:

The Joint Chiefs of Staff have all the faults of a committee in settling important controversial matters. They must consider and accommodate many divergent views before action can be taken. In seeking unanimity, they spend much time overcoming dissent. For instance, we argued for months before reaching agreement over the allocation by service of the important assignments in the Joint Staff after its reorganization had been authorized by

⁸⁴National Security Act of 1947, op. cit., p. 20.

⁸⁵"Civilian and Military Personnel," loc. cit.

⁸⁶Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 156-157.

was increased to its present statutory limit of four hundred officers.⁸⁴ The personnel strength of the Joint Staff as of October 31, 1966, consisted of 433 military and 315 civilians. The total employment for all Joint Chiefs of Staff activities, including the Joint Staff, consists of 1,389 military personnel and 459 civilian employees.⁸⁵

Criticisms of the Joint Chiefs Organization

The primary criticism of the Joint Chiefs of Staff

has concerned the nature of "committee" decision. The requirement for unanimity to give high grades of policy advice to decision leads to a considerable degree of policy dilution through compromise which may not be in the best interest of national security.⁸⁶ General Taylor, speaking from experience, very candidly described this aspect as weakness in the Joint Chiefs' nature when he said:

The Joint Chiefs of Staff have all the faults of a committee in settling important controversial matters. They must consider and accommodate many divergent views before action can be taken. In seeking unanimity, they spend much time overruling dissent. For instance, we argued for months before reaching agreement over the allocation of service of the important assignments in the Joint Staff after the reorganization had been authorized by

⁸⁴ National Security Act of 1947, 50 U.S.C. § 150.

⁸⁵ "Civilian and Military Personnel," 100-211.

⁸⁶ Samuel E. Huntington, "Strategic Progress and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, 22-241, pp. 156-157.

Congress in 1958. When compromise fails, then additional time is required to prepare the contending positions for presentation to the Secretary of Defense.⁸⁷

Another criticism has been offered that the Joint Chiefs exercise a monopoly on the presentation of alternatives. This leaves the less-experienced civilians, especially Congressmen and the public, in the position of either accepting or rejecting a policy rather than providing a choice.⁸⁸

Criticism also takes the form that few new ideas can be generated in an organization which emphasizes discipline and chain of command. Under these conditions, the best which can be expected are improvements on old policies or the maintenance of the status quo.⁸⁹

These criticisms are not an inclusive summary of faults. However, they do represent the most significant aspects of the Joint Chiefs of Staff as prime military strategists within the national security policy process.

In the preceding sections, a general overview of the unification conflict, the unification act, and Department

⁸⁷Taylor, op. cit., pp. 93-94.

⁸⁸Lewis A. Dexter, "Congressmen and the Making of Military Policy," Components of Defense Policy, ed. Davis B. Bobrow (Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1965), pp. 102-103.

⁸⁹Robert H. Ginsburg, "The Challenge to Military Professionalism," Components of Defense Policy, op. cit., p. 139.

...Congress in 1958. When compromise failed, then additional time is required to prepare the corresponding legislation for presentation to the Secretary of Defense.⁸⁷

Another criticism has been offered that the Joint

Chiefs exercise a monopoly on the presentation of alternative. This leaves the less-experienced civilians,

especially Congressmen and the public, in the position of either accepting or rejecting a policy rather than providing a choice.⁸⁸

Criticism also takes the form that the Joint Chiefs be presented in an organization which emphasizes discipline and chain of command. Under these conditions, the best which can be expected are improvements on old policies or the maintenance of the status quo.⁸⁹

These criticisms are not an inclusive summary of faults. However, they do represent the most significant aspects of the Joint Chiefs of Staff as policy-making strategists within the national security policy process. In the preceding sections, a general overview of the unification conflict, the unification act, and subsequent

⁸⁷ Taylor, *op. cit.*, pp. 32-34.

⁸⁸ Lewis A. Gentry, "Congress and the Making of Military Policy," *Components of Defense Policy*, ed. Davis E. Brown (Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1963), pp. 102-103.

⁸⁹ Robert M. Gussard, "The Challenge to Military Revolutionism," *Components of Defense Policy*, *op. cit.*, p. 113.

of Defense organization has been presented in order that environment and actors, within the national security policy arena, can be related to their proper perspectives. The conditions which presently exist can best be summarized as a continuing conflict of interest among the three armed services, between the individual and collective services and the Office of the Secretary of Defense, and, to some extent, between the objective and subjective proponents of military control. There is every indication that the Secretary of Defense has strengthened considerably the civilian leadership and control of the military; however, military influence has not been radically degraded because the overall horizons for military influence have widened.

The next chapter will focus attention on the range and types of military involvement in the nation's security policy.

on defense organization has been presented in order that
 environment and action, within the national security policy
 arena, can be related to their proper perspective. The
 conditions which inevitably exist can best be summarized as
 a continuing conflict of interests among the three arms
 services, between the individual and collective services
 and the office of the Secretary of Defense, and, to some
 extent, between the objective and subjective viewpoints of
 military control. There is every indication that the
 Secretary of Defense has strengthened considerably the
 civilian leadership and control of our military; however,
 military influence has not been radically degraded because
 the overall horizon for military influence has widened.
 The next chapter will focus attention on the range
 and types of military involvement in the nation's security
 policy.

CHAPTER IV

MILITARY INVOLVEMENT IN NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

The boundary between foreign and domestic policy has almost been erased. Foreign policy, military policy, and economic policy are now intimately linked. The United States has relations with over 100 countries, mutual defense treaties with over 40, and participates in scores of regional and international organizations. Policy must be made and executed in the context of fast-moving and world shaking events¹

The blurring of the lines between military, foreign, and domestic policy increases the significance of the actors performing in the national security policy milieu. The military's involvement in the national security policy process generates particular interest because the subject is not restricted to the vital role of defense posture. Nearly all discussions of the military's role eventually must take into account such side interests as militarism, the military mind, and the seeking of military solutions to political questions. The question of the military having a role is seldom raised. Military involvement in policy formulation and implementation has become a fact of American defense; however, the degree of involvement is a controversial issue and warrants study.

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Basic Issues, a study submitted by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963), p. 1.

CHAPTER IV

MILITARY INVOLVEMENT IN NATIONAL SECURITY POLICY

The boundary between foreign and domestic policy has almost been crossed. Foreign policy, military policy, and economic policy are now intimately linked. The United States has relations with over 100 countries, mutual defense treaties with over 40, and participates in scores of regional and international organizations. Policy must be made and executed in the context of fast-moving and world-shaking events

The blurring of the lines between military, foreign, and domestic policy increases the significance of the actors performing in the national security policy arena. The military's involvement in the national security policy process generates particular interest because the subject is not restricted to the vital role of defense posture. Nearly all discussions of the military's role eventually must take into account such side interests as militarism, the military mind, and the weakening of military relations to political questions. The question of the military having a role is seldom raised. Military involvement in policy formulation and implementation has become a fact of national defense; however, the degree of involvement is a controversial issue and warrants study.

¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government and Operations, Administration of National Security: Basic Issues, a study submitted by the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 95th Cong., 1st Sess., Committee Print Investigation: Government Printing Office, 1957, p. 1.

President Kennedy recognized the need for broad military involvement in national security affairs when, after speaking of the military's responsibilities in purely military matters, he stated:

The nonmilitary problems which you will face will also be most demanding, diplomatic, political and economic. In the years ahead, some of you will serve as advisors to foreign aid missions or even to foreign governments. Some will negotiate terms of a cease-fire with broad political as well as military ramifications. Some of you will go to the far corners of the earth, and to the far reaches of space. Some of you will sit in the highest councils of the Pentagon. Others will hold delicate command posts which are international in character. Still others will advise on plans to abolish arms instead of using them to abolish others. Whatever your position, the scope of your decisions will not be confined to the traditional tenets of military competence and training. You will need to know and understand not only the foreign policy of the United States, but the foreign policy of all countries scattered around the world You will be involved in economic judgments which most economists would hesitate to make.²

The observations made by the President in 1962 reflected the obvious involvement of the military in the national security process. If one accepts the broader connotation of national security policy as affecting the domestic economic and political areas as well as the overt

²United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected Papers, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1962), p. 18. Hereafter referred to as Administration of National Security: Selected Papers.

President Kennedy recognized the need for broad military involvement in national security efforts when, after speaking of the military's responsibilities in purely military matters, he stated:

The military problem which you will face will also be one of timing, timing, timing, political and economic. In the years ahead, some of you will serve as advisors to foreign and defense or even to foreign governments. Some will negotiate terms of a cease-fire with broad political as well as military implications. Some of you will go to the far corners of the earth, and to the far reaches of space. Some of you will sit in the highest councils of the Pentagon. Others will hold military commands. Some will be instrumental in execution. Still others will advise on plans to abolish them instead of using them to abolish others. Whatever your position, the scope of your decisions will not be confined to the traditional limits of military competence and training. You will need to know and understand not only the foreign policy of the United States, but the foreign policy of all countries scattered around the world. . . . You will be involved in economic judgments which most economists would hesitate to make.

The association made by the President in 1961 re-

lated the obvious involvement of the military in the national security process. It was another step toward recognition of national security policy as affecting the domestic economic and political areas as well as the over-

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Selected Topics, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d Sess., Washington, Government Printing Office, 1962, p. 18. Material referred to as Administration of National Security, Selected Topics.

elements of national defense, then the influence of the military exerts a far greater effect than that normally recognized. This influence can be seen easily in the policy planning and implementation stages and also becomes apparent when some factors of "non-military" domestic area are evaluated.

I. MILITARY INFLUENCE IN POLICY PLANNING

The requirement for military participation in formulating national military plans was explicitly recognized by the "National Security Act of 1947."³ According to the military definition, the purpose of planning concerns "the forecasting, programming, and coordination of a logical sequence of events which, if successful, will accomplish the commander's mission."⁴ The elements of effective planning, therefore, presupposes that the military commander's mission or goal has been concretely articulated by his superiors. In the case of national military strategy, this assignment of goals must come ultimately from the President

³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Act of 1947, as amended through September 20, 1966, Committee Print, 89th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), p. 19.

⁴Jack D. Nicholas et al., The Joint and Combined Staff Officers Manual (Harrisburg, Pennsylvania: The Stackpole Company, 1959), p. 105.

elements of national defense, then the influence of the military tends to be greater when that normally recognized. This influence can be seen easily in the policy planning and implementation stages and also becomes apparent when such factors of "non-military" character are involved.

1. MILITARY INFLUENCE IN POLICY MAKING

The recognition of the military participation in formulating national military plans was explicitly recognized by the "National Security Act of 1947." According to the military definition, the purpose of planning consists "in forecasting, programming, and coordination of a logical sequence of events which, if successful, will accomplish the commander's mission." The elements of effective planning, therefore, presuppose that the military commander's vision or goal has been concretely articulated by his superiors. In the case of national military strategy, this assignment of goals also comes directly from the President.

²United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, National Security Act of 1947, as amended through September 10, 1950, Committee Print, 84th Cong., 1st Sess., Washington: Government Printing Office, 1955, p. 19.

³John G. Wickham et al., The Joint and Component Staff Officer Manual (Wash., D.C.: Headquarters, Joint Chiefs of Staff, 1953), p. 105.

of the United States. Even if military strategy is primarily based on non-military objectives, the fact has been recognized that "despite the politicalization of strategy, military power is still a dominant reality in the present conflict [cold war] and the key underpinning of American Policy."⁵ Further recognition of the importance of military planning was implicitly stated by Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., when he said:

It is now evident that military power becomes the master of foreign policy not when there is too much of it but when there is too little. It is the absence of lopsidedness of armed strength that allows the military situation to run foreign affairs. When our military policy is inadequate to meet a variety of crisis, our foreign policy must become constrained, rigid, and inflexible. Balanced and ample military power is consequently the price we must pay for freedom of national action.⁶

Although the military exerts considerable influence in national security policy through implementation of policy and the maintenance of necessary military force for implementation of policy, their greatest influence is in direct participation in policy formulation. These efforts are primarily military in nature but some degree of political character cannot be overlooked.

⁵William R. Kintner, "The Politicalization of Strategy," National Security, ed. David M. Abshire (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1963), p. 381.

⁶Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., "Military Force: How Much and Where?," The Reporter, IX (August 4, 1953), 13.

of the United States. Even if military strategy is still
 really based on non-military objectives, the fact has been
 recognized that "despite the politicization of strategy,
 military power is still a dominant reality in the present
 conflict [Cold war] and the key understanding of American
 policy."² Further recognition of the importance of mili-
 tary planning was implicitly stated by Arthur M. Schlesinger,
 Jr., when he said:

It is now evident that military power becomes the
 master of foreign policy not when there is too much
 of it but when there is too little. It is the ab-
 sence of leadership of armed strength that allows
 the military situation to run foreign affairs. When
 our military policy is inadequate to meet a variety
 of crises, our foreign policy must become constrained,
 rigid, and inflexible. National and empire military
 power is consequently the price we must pay for free-
 dom of national action.³

Although the military exerts considerable influence
 in national security policy through implementation of
 policy and the maintenance of necessary military force for
 implementation of policy, their greatest influence is in
 direct participation in policy formulation. These efforts
 are primarily military in nature but some degree of politi-
 cal character cannot be overlooked.

² William R. Vinen, "The politicization of the
 policy," National Security, ed. David M. Shapiro (New York:
 Frederick A. Praeger, Publishers, 1963), p. 101.

³ Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., "Military Force: How
 much and where?" The Reporter, 12 (August 4, 1963), 12.

Professional Expertise in Military Strategy

Huntington described expertise as:

The skill of the officer is neither a craft . . . nor an art It is instead an extraordinarily complex intellectual skill requiring comprehensive study and training. It must be remembered that the peculiar skill of the officer is the management of violence not the act of violence itself.⁷

The military's expertise allows them to contribute their special knowledge and skills to the decision-making process in an advisory capacity, but expertise does not carry an obligation that the advice be incorporated into national policy.⁸ The degree to which military advice is adhered to depends upon the atmosphere in which it is tendered and the prestige of the adviser. In times of potential military crisis, the recommendations of the Joint Chiefs of Staff take on a more significant relevance. This situation was prominent in the 1950's when the National Security Council found itself more and more concerned with military matters. According to Raymond: "The military's long range objectives became a controlling factor . . . that could hardly be altered after all the exhausting work and hard fought compromises that went into them." He went

⁷ Samuel P. Huntington, The Soldier and the State (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University, 1957), p. 18.

⁸ Burton Sapin, Richard C. Snyder and H. W. Bruck, An Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note (Princeton University Organizational Behavioral Section, July, 1954), pp. 20-21.

Professional Expertise in Military Decision-Making

Washington described expertise as:

"The skill of the officer is not a craft . . . but an art . . . It is learned an experientially, through intellectual skill requiring cooperative study and training. It must be remembered that the peculiar skill of the officer is the management of violence not the act of violence itself."

The military's expertise allows them to contribute their special knowledge and skills to the decision-making process in an advisory capacity, but expertise does not carry an obligation that the advice be incorporated into national policy.¹¹ The degree to which military advice is adhered to depends upon the atmosphere in which it is rendered and the prestige of the adviser. In times of potential military crisis, the recommendations of the Joint Chiefs of Staff take on a more significant relevance. This situation was prominent in the 1950's when the National Security Council found itself more and more concerned with military matters. According to Raymond, "The military's long range objectives become a controlling factor . . . that could hardly be altered short of the exhausting work and hard fought campaigns that went into them." He went

¹¹ Samuel P. Huntington, The Soldier and the State (Cambridge, The Belknap Press of Harvard University, 1957), p. 16.

¹² Eugene Sabia, Richard C. Snyder and W. H. Brown, Jr., Problems and the Military in American Foreign Policy: A Research Note (Lincoln University, Organizational Development Section, July, 1954), pp. 20-21.

on to say that "once the premise of military crisis was established anyway, the influence of the military experts was substantial."⁹

Professional expertise directly involves the military leadership in broad national policy. The degree of involvement is controlled or limited by the broad policy goals determined by the political leadership. During the Eisenhower Administration, the basic policy was determined by the National Security Council and delivered to the armed forces as an annual paper, entitled "Basic National Security Policy." The Joint Chiefs translated the basic document into broad military policy in the shape of plans and programs to support the approved national policy. This planning produced the military forces necessary to implement the policy and the budget formulation necessary to support the plans and programs. The military document which expressed basic military policy was the "Joint Strategic Objectives Plan."¹⁰ Under this system, military involvement in the implementation of national security policy was clearly defined. However, the degree of influence wielded by the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs as adviser to the National Security Council in the determination of the contents of

⁹Jack Raymond, Power at the Pentagon (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1964), p. 243.

¹⁰Maxwell D. Taylor, The Uncertain Trumpet (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1960), p. 22.

on to say that "once the problem of military crisis was established anyway, the influence of the military experts was substantial."⁹

Professional expertise directly influences the military leadership in broad national policy. The degree of involvement is controlled or limited by the broad policy goals determined by the political leadership. During the Eisenhower Administration, the basic policy was determined by the National Security Council and delivered to the armed forces as an annual paper, entitled "Basic National Security Policy." The Joint Chiefs translated the basic document into broad military policy in the shape of plans and programs to support the approved national policy. This plan-ning provided the military forces necessary to implement the policy and the budget formulation necessary to support the plans and programs. The military document which expressed basic military policy was the Joint Strategic Objectives Plan.¹⁰ Under this system, military involvement in the implementation of national security policy was clearly defined. However, the degree of influence wielded by the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs as adviser to the National Security Council in the determination of the contents of

⁹ Jack Hayward, Power at the Pentagon (New York:

Harper and Row, Publishers, 1961), p. 141.

¹⁰ Maxwell O. Taylor, The Uncertain Weapon (New York:

Harper and Row, Publishers, 1960), p. 17.

the "Basic National Security Policy" document can only be speculated.

Some changes in the means of providing the military with overall national policy goals were made when President Kennedy took office. The annual "Basic National Security Policy" document was discontinued. However, McGeorge Bundy, in a letter to Senator Jackson dated September 4, 1961, indicated that policy determinations were still passed to Government departments although in a less formal manner.¹¹ Regardless of the system used, military policy works within the framework of national policy directives and is still primarily the responsibility of the military leadership.

The degree of direct involvement of the military in national security policy can best be realized by observing the scope of their involvement in activities and agencies concerned with national defense and foreign policy. The Joint Chiefs of Staff are responsible for basic military policy and strategy to support national policy goals. Additionally, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff is the primary adviser to the President on military matters. The Director of the Central Intelligence Agency, Vice Admiral William F. Raborn, Jr., USN, Retired, attends, in an advisory role, all meetings of the National Security

¹¹Administration of National Security, Selected Papers, op. cit., pp. 5-8.

the "Basic National Security Policy" document can only be

speculated.

Some changes in the means of presenting the military

also overall national policy goals were made upon President

Kennedy took office. The annual "Basic National Security

Policy" document was discontinued. However, according to

in a letter to Senator Jackson dated September 4, 1961.

indicated that policy determinations were still passed to

Government departments although in a less formal manner. If

dependence of the system used, military policy work within

the framework of national policy objectives and is still

primarily the responsibility of the military leadership.

The degree of direct involvement of the military in

national security policy can best be realized by observing

the scope of their involvement in activities and agencies

concerned with national defense and foreign policy. The

Joint Chiefs of Staff are responsible for basic military

policy and strategy to support national policy goals.

Additionally, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff is

the primary advisor to the President on military matters.

The Director of the Central Intelligence Agency, Vice

Admiral William S. Parsons, Jr., NW, retired, attends, in

an advisory role, all meetings of the National Security

Council, as does the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs.¹² As principal advisers within their fields and as Presidential appointees, the counsel of these two military officers must be considered as influential not only in support of national policy but also in its formulation.

At a lower or staff level, military officers hold positions through which policy proposals, and other recommendations affecting national security must be channeled to the proper decision makers. The chart on the following page, Figure 3, indicates to some degree the military's involvement.¹³ All of these military personnel are not directly concerned with broad aspects of national security policy formulation or implementation; however, their assignments place them in a position to persuade or influence their civilian superiors on broad policy matters as well as the routine aspects of their assignments. Another significant point which should be noted is that all the assignments noted on the chart are outside the normally recognized military establishment--the Army, Navy, and Air Force Departments.

¹²Ibid., p. 38.

¹³Chart compiled from Department of Defense "Civilian and Military Personnel," working papers for fiscal year 1968 budget, 1 December 1966. Copies held by candidate. Hereafter referred to as "Civilian and Military Personnel."

General, as does the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs.¹² As
political advisers within their fields and as Presidential
appointees, the counsel of these two military officers must
be considered as influential not only in support of national
policy but also in its formulation.
At a lower or staff level, military officers hold
positions through which policy proposals, and other recom-
mendations affecting national security must be channelled to
the proper decision makers. The chart on the following
page, Figure 1, indicates to some degree the military's
involvement.¹³ All of these military personnel are not
directly concerned with broad aspects of national security
policy formulation or implementation; however, their assign-
ment place them in a position to pressure or influence
their civilian superiors on broad policy matters as well as
the routine aspects of their assignments. Another slight-
cant point which should be noted is that all the assign-
ments noted on the chart are outside the normally recognized
military establishment--the Army, Navy, and Air Force insti-
tutions.

¹² 1960, p. 28.

¹³ Chart compiled from Department of Defense Civilian
and Military Personnel, "Working papers for fiscal year 1963
budget, 1 December 1962. Copies held by candidate. Here-
after referred to as "Civilian and Military Personnel."

OFFICE OR AGENCY	MILITARY OFFICERS ASSIGNED
Secretary of Defense	2
Deputy Secretary of Defense	2
Director of Defense Research and Engineering	173
Assistant Secretary (Administration)	154
Assistant Secretary (Comptroller)	10
Assistant Secretary (Installations and Logistics)	43
Assistant Secretary (International Security Affairs)	81
Assistant Secretary (Manpower)	59
Assistant Secretary (Public Affairs)	101
Assistant Secretary (Systems Analysis)	52
Special Staff Assistants	54
Defense Atomic Support Agency	1,126
Defense Communications Agency	473
Defense Intelligence Agency	1,445
Defense Supply Agency	1,008
International Military Activities	40
Offices and Agencies Outside DOD	1,367

Figure 3

Military Officer Corps Assignment, Outside the
Departments of the Army, Navy, and Air Force,
September-November, 1966

WILLIAM
OVERMAN
ALLISON

OFFICE OF ARMY

Secretary of Defense
Deputy Secretary of Defense
Director of Defense Research and Engineering
Assistant Secretary (Administration)
Assistant Secretary (Comptroller)
Assistant Secretary (Installations and Logistics)
Assistant Secretary (International Security Affairs)
Assistant Secretary (Manpower)
Assistant Secretary (Public Affairs)
Assistant Secretary (Systems Analysis)
Special Staff Assistant
Defense Atomic Support Agency
Defense Communications Agency
Defense Intelligence Agency
Defense Supply Agency
International Military Activities
Office and Agencies Outside DOD

Figure 3

Military Office Corps Assignment, Outside the
Department of the Army, Navy, and Air Force,
September-December, 1952

Within the military establishment, a transition has occurred in the concept of military strategy and military involvement. Part of this change was reflected in General Gavin's explanation of why there should be a greater military voice in national strategy. He observed that the military role as tactician was not a controversial issue and that "general war will . . . be a war involving the entire earth as a tactical theater." Therefore, strategy must be brought into accord with capabilities and the military leadership was best suited to determine capability.¹⁴ Another significant departure from the traditional involvement of the military in broad policy determination is reflected in the growth of politico-military affairs sections in all three military service organizations. In the Navy, this organization is integrated into the Office of the Chief of Naval Operations. The Army and the Air Force have similar sections which work under the Secretaries' Offices. These groups are primarily concerned with the implications of military actions on the political situation and vice versa.

The role of military expertise in national strategy has recently come under fire from several quarters. First,

¹⁴James Gavin, War and Peace in the Space Age (New York: Harpers and Brothers, Publishers, 1958), pp. 213-217.

Within the military establishment, a transition has occurred in the concept of military strategy and military involvement. Part of this change was reflected in General Dwight's explanation of why there should be a greater military voice in national strategy. He observed that the military role as facilitator was not a controversial issue and that "general war will . . . be a war involving the entire nation as a national effort." Therefore, strategy must be developed in accordance with capabilities and the military leadership was held liable to determine capability.¹⁴ Another significant departure from the traditional involvement of the military in broad policy determination is reflected in the growth of politico-military affairs sections in all three military service organizations. In the Navy, this organization is integrated into the Office of the Chief of Naval Operations. The Army and the Air Force have similar sections which work under the headquarters Office. These groups are primarily concerned with the implications of military actions on the political situation and vice versa.

The role of military expertise in national strategy has recently come under fire from several quarters. First,

¹⁴ James Owen, War and Peace in the Space Age (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1961), pp. 211-217.

there has been increasing civilian intrusion in the military strategy field since the end of World War II. This intrusion, in the form of civilian "think" factories, was primarily the result of the new emphasis being placed on the scientific approach and the recognition that many strategic problems better lend themselves to objective study utilizing computers than to analysis based on past military experience.¹⁵ The quantum jump in weapons development has also encouraged civilian intrusion in military strategy on the basis that now, more than ever before, military strategy must be closely coordinated and subjugated to political policy. A stronger civilian control and direction of the military establishment has also contributed to more civilian influence in military strategy. This influence, especially in the area of weapons selection, necessarily forces the military leadership to formulate its strategic concepts on the basis of available technological capabilities.

Civilian intrusion into the area traditionally reserved for military expertise has been the basis for much of the friction between the military establishment and its

¹⁵ Samuel P. Huntington, "Power Expertise and the Military Profession," American Defense Policy, ed. Wesley W. Posvar et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), pp. 188-189.

there has been increasing civilian involvement in the military strategy field since the end of World War II. This involvement, in the form of civilian "think" factories, was primarily the result of the new emphasis being placed on the scientific approach and the recognition that many strategic problems were too complex for themselves to objective study utilizing computers than to analysts based on past military experience.¹² The growing trend in weapons development has also encouraged civilian involvement in military strategy on the basis that now, more than ever before, military strategy must be closely coordinated and subordinated to political policy. A stronger civilian control and direction of the military establishment has also contributed to more civilian influence in military strategy. This influence, especially in the area of weapons selection, necessarily forces the military leadership to formulate its strategic concepts on the basis of available technological capabilities.

Civilian involvement in the area traditionally reserved for military expertise has been the basis for much of the friction between the military establishment and its

¹² Samuel P. Huntington, "Power, Expertise and the Military Profession," American Defense Policy, ed. Wesley C. Turner et al. (Washington: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952), pp. 129-133.

civilian leadership since World War II. This condition must be considered as a possible stimuli for expanding military political action. While content to work within broad national policy determined by civilian policy makers, the military resent civilian determination of military capability and broad military policy. Thus, efforts have been directed toward influencing Congress and the public in the strategy area.

One of the courses of action which has been followed by the military establishment to counteract the intrusion of civilian specialists into the military policy process has been to enlarge the number of specialists within the officer corps. This course was also the result of an obvious need for better-trained officers in a period of rapid technological change; however, it has been used to oppose the argument that experience alone does not prepare the military man to formulate military policy heavily constrained by political objectives. As an example of the new look in military education, the Navy Officer Corps included 43,784 officers with Baccalaureate degrees, 1,797 officers with significant postgraduate work, and 5,401 officers holding Master's degrees as of January 1, 1966. At the same time, several hundred officers held Doctorate degrees, and these figures do not include over five thousand M.D.'s and D.D.S.'s.¹⁶

¹⁶Memorandum from the Office of Naval Personnel (PERS-C31a) dated 1 January 1967.

civilian leadership since World War II. This condition must be considered as a potential stimuli for expanding military political action. While content to work within policy areas, the military policy determined by civilian policy areas, the military retains civilian decision as military capacity and broad military policy. Thus, efforts have been directed toward maintaining continuity and the public in the strategy area.

One of the causes of action which has been followed by the military establishment to counteract the influence of civilian specialists from the military policy process has been to enlarge the number of specialists within the officer corps. This course was also the result of an obvious need for better-trained officers in a period of rapid technological change. However, it has been used to replace the argument that expansion alone does not improve the military and to formulate military policy heavily constrained by political objectives. As an example of the new focus in military education, the Navy Officer Corps included 41,784 officers with 1,757 officers with significant postgraduate work, and 2,401 officers holding Master's degrees as of January 1, 1966. At the same time, several hundred officers held doctorate degrees, and these figures do not include over five thousand M.D.s and D.D.s.¹⁸

¹⁸Information from the Office of Naval Personnel (1965-1966) dated 1 January 1967.

The military services have also geared inservice schools to train their senior officers in politico-military matters. Among the schools are well-respected institutions such as the National War College, the Industrial College of the Armed Forces, and the Armed Forces Staff College. All these institutions are designed to improve the expertise of the military officer by providing them "with a broad educational preparation for higher policy making, command and staff assignments within the national security structure."¹⁷ The service academies have changed their curricula in the postwar era to include a broader study in the social sciences with the same idea of improving the background of future policy makers.

Turning to some of the practical aspects of military expertise in national security policy, one only has to scan the news media to see the most obvious involvements of military leadership. There is a dramatic involvement in the Viet Nam Conflict. But the particular political circumstances in that war have rendered even tactical decisions open to military-civilian strategic dispute. This situation finds ranking officers in the war zone as well as the Joint

¹⁷Office of the Federal Register, United States Government Organization Manual 1966-67 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 212-213. Hereafter referred to as Government Organization Manual.

The military services have also gained leadership schools to train their senior officers in politico-military matters. Among the schools are well-respected institutions such as the National War College, the Industrial College of the Armed Forces, and the Armed Forces Staff College. All these institutions are designed to improve the expertise of the military officer by providing them with a broad educational preparation for higher policy making, command and staff assignments within the national security structure. The service academies have changed their curricula in the past to include a broader study in the social sciences with the aim of increasing the background of future policy makers. Turning to some of the practical aspects of military expertise in national security policy, one only has to scan the news media to see the most obvious involvements of military leadership. There is a dramatic involvement in the Viet Nam conflict. But the particular political circumstances in that war have resulted in radical decisions open to military-civilian strategic dispute. This situation finds training officers in the war zone as well as the joint

¹Office of the Federal Register, United States Government Organization Manual 1966-67 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 112-113. Material referred to as Government Organization Manual.

Chiefs differing with the civilian leadership. Such matters as cease-fire in the war for holidays have been criticized by the military as detrimental to combat effectiveness.¹⁸ The debate among National Security Council Members over the effects and wisdom of the bombing of North Viet Nam, which reportedly pits the Joint Chiefs, the Secretary of State, and the President's special assistant for National Security Affairs against the Secretary of Defense and other opponents of the bombing strategy and tactics, also reflects an interesting military-political involvement.¹⁹ While military involvement through advisers in Southeast Asia has been well publicized, there have been reports of similar activities in Latin America.²⁰ The role of the military in aiding other nations in their counter-insurgency activities has a far greater political impact than its military function suggests. The sale of arms to foreign nations also involves the military and has a bearing on national security policy. The Joint Chiefs have been deeply involved in both the military and political aspects of the controversy of troop withdrawals from Europe.²¹

¹⁸ Article in The Washington Post, December 13, 1966.

¹⁹ Ibid., December 21, 1966.

²⁰ Ibid., December 13, 1966.

²¹ Ibid., December 21, 1966.

Civilian-Military Policy Coordination

Part of the expanded military involvement in national security policy was caused by the degree of policy coordination required in the policy process. In order to gain a perspective of policy coordination problems, one only has to review the previously discussed high-level organizational efforts directed to this end. The National Security Council was the first organization specifically designed for policy coordination. The Operations Coordinating Board supplemented the National Security Council, and this was followed by President Kennedy's ad hoc task group method. The latest effort has generated the newly-established Senior Inter-departmental Group of the Johnson Administration.

The same problem of policy coordination exists at most levels in the national security policy process. Some idea of military involvement in the policy coordination area can be gleaned from the fact that over one thousand military officers are retained by departments other than Defense.²² These personnel are utilized for military expertise as well as pure policy coordination, but the end result is the same inasmuch as they provide the military viewpoint on national security policy.

²²"Military and Civilian Personnel," loc. cit.

Civilian-Military Policy Coordination

Part of the expanded military involvement in national security policy was caused by the degree of policy coordination also required in the policy process. In order to gain a perspective of policy coordination problems, one only has to review the previously discussed high-level organizational efforts directed to this end. The National Security Council was the first organization specifically designed for policy coordination. The Operations Coordinating Board supplied the National Security Council, and this was followed by President Kennedy's ad hoc task group members. The latter effort was generated for newly-established Senior Inter-Departmental Group of the Johnson Administration. The same problem of policy coordination exists at all levels in the national security policy process. Some idea of military involvement in the policy coordination area can be gleaned from the fact that over one thousand military officers are retained by departments other than Defense.¹² These personnel are utilized for military expertise as well as pure policy coordination, but the end result is the same inasmuch as they provide the military viewpoint on national security policy.

¹² Military and Civilian Personnel, "Doc. 115."

Some of the more important instances of involvement of officers in the coordination process include the military men who hold positions in the Department of State's Policy Planning Council,²³ the representatives of the Joint Chiefs who sit on Interdepartmental Regional Group conferences, the military representatives on the Disarmament Commission, the officers who hold Congressional liaison positions and the military advisers to the various ambassadors. This group was cited because they reflect those positions closest to the policy process.

In each case of policy coordination, there is the ever-present potential of further military involvement in aspects of the problem being considered. The case of the Agency for International Development in South Viet Nam provides a good example of coordination problems which saw the military taking on additional responsibilities in an area designated as State Department responsibility. In this particular instance, the military Assistance Command, Viet Nam, increased its activities and authority largely because the AID mission was unable to meet the requirements of the pacification program without military assistance.²⁴

²³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Hearing before its Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., June 25, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 573.

²⁴Article in The Washington Post, December 11, 1966.

loss of the more important instances of involvement of officers in the coordination process include the staff, very few who hold positions in the Department of State's Policy Planning Council,²³ the representatives of the Joint Chiefs who sit on interdepartmental Regional Group committees, the military representatives on the Operations Commission, the military who hold Congressional liaison positions and the military advisers to the various agencies. This group was cited because they reflect those positions closest to the policy process. In each case of policy coordination, there is an ever-present potential of further military involvement in aspects of the problem being considered. The case of the Agency for International Development is cited, for example, as a good example of coordination problems which saw the military taking on additional responsibilities in an area designated as State Department responsibility. In this particular instance, the military assistance command, Vietnam, increased its activities and authority largely because the AID mission was unable to meet the requirements of the coordination program without military assistance.²⁴

²³ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Hearing before the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 80th Cong., 2d Sess., June 22, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 271.

²⁴ Article in The Washington Post, December 11, 1960.

Perhaps the most important point of coordination and military involvement is at the top of the military hierarchy. This is undoubtedly true in the case of basic policy formulation. All State Department proposals are reviewed by the Joint Chiefs on the basis of capability implementation as previously discussed. However, the Department of Defense's International Security Affairs Office reviews and comments on all State Department proposals, and over 25 per cent of its staff are in uniform. The International Security Affairs Office, as well as the Joint Chiefs, originate policy proposals both in conjunction with and separately from the Department of State.

Military involvement in national security policy can also be the result of a breakdown in the coordination process. Some of the best known examples of this aspect of the policy coordination problem involves statements by military figures which were not cleared through the proper channels. General MacArthur's statement which led to his recall was one such incident. In this statement, the General called for total victory while the Administration was trying to find a basis for compromise.²⁵ Another prime example concerned the 1956 publication of a plan by Admiral Radford,

²⁵ Richard H. Rovere and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., The General and the President (New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1951), pp. 160-171.

between the most important points of coordination and military involvement is at the top of the military hierarchy. This is undoubtedly true in the case of basic policy formulation. All State Department proposals are reviewed by the Joint Chiefs on the basis of capability requirements as previously discussed. However, the Department of Defense's International Security Affairs Office reviews and comments on all State Department proposals, and over 15 percent of its staff are in uniform. The International Security Affairs Office, as well as the Joint Chiefs, originate policy proposals both in conjunction with and separately from the Department of State.

Military involvement in national security policy can also be the result of a breakdown in the coordination process. Some of the best known examples of this aspect of the policy coordination problem involve statements by military figures which were not cleared through the proper channels. General MacArthur's statement which led to his recall was one such incident. In this statement, the General called for total victory while the Administration was trying to find a basis for compromise.²² Another prime example concerned the 1950 publication of a plan by Admiral Nimitz,

²² Richard A. Rovere and Robert A. Dahl, *The General and the President* (New York: Basic Books, 1968), pp. 160-171.

the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, to curtail military commitments in Europe. The effect of the statement was to contradict and embarrass the head of a foreign state and to strain what had otherwise been an excellent relationship between Secretary of State Dulles and Chancellor Adenauer.²⁶

Lesser problems involving lack of policy coordination occur frequently and add to the confusion which necessarily exists in the large and complex national security policy process. Such problems have been cited as the occasion when the Air Force launched over two hundred of the large meteorological balloons at the height of the Soviet campaign against all types of balloons and in contradiction to a program of non-antagonism being pursued by the United States Information Agency. The political repercussions of an ill-timed press release on research and development of bacteriological and chemical warfare just before the President sent his major disarmament proposals to the United Nations is another example of blunder through lack of coordination.²⁷

²⁶ Roscoe Drummond and Gaston Goblentz, Duel at the Brink (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1960), pp. 45-46.

²⁷ The American Assembly, The Representation of the United States Abroad (New York: Columbia University, 1956), p. 115.

II. MILITARY AS POLICY IMPLEMENTERS

In the strictest sense, only the President can make the decisions which determine the nation's security policy. However, in practice, the President relies a great deal on policy recommendations and generally can be said to choose between broad policy alternatives. Within the framework of national security goals, the various government departments and agencies formulate their particular policies to implement the policies of the President. For the military, the implementation of United States security policy primarily involves the maintenance of sufficient military capability to preserve the physical integrity of the nation and to provide sufficient military force to support the nation's foreign policy objectives.

Guardians of Security

The military forces of the nation have as their primary mission the physical security of the nation. Prior to World War II, the natural defenses provided by the two oceans and traditionally impotent neighbors restricted the need for extended military protection or foreign alliances. The development of long-range aircraft and then missiles added a third dimension to territorial defense. The concept of vertical defense and long-range attack capabilities drastically changed the parameters in which military policy

II. MILITARY AS POLICY INSTRUMENT

In the strictest sense, only the President can make the decision which determines the nation's security policy. However, in practice, the President takes a great deal of policy recommendations and generally can be said to choose between broad policy alternatives. Within the framework of national security goals, the various government departments and agencies formulate their particular policies to implement the policies of the President. For the military, the implementation of United States security policy primarily involves the maintenance of sufficient military capability to preserve the physical integrity of the nation and to provide sufficient military force to support the nation's foreign policy objectives.

Guardians of Security

The military forces of the nation have as their primary mission the physical security of the nation. Prior to World War II, the national defenses provided by the two oceans and traditionally important neighbors restricted the need for extended military protection or foreign alliances. The development of long-range aircraft and then missiles added a third dimension to territorial defense. The concept of vertical defense and long-range attack capabilities drastically changed the parameters in which military policy

operates. These developments coincided with and complemented the changing concepts of the United States political role in world affairs.

The effects of the changing concepts of security needs directly involved the utilization of the military forces of the United States. The military leadership, therefore, became involved in the implementation of a drastically expanded security policy. The most significant involvement related to the building of sufficient military capability to allow a more flexible and effective foreign policy without weakening the national defense force. The road taken to provide sufficient military capability was rough and slow, but the end results have seen the emergence of adequate military strength to permit military commitments around the globe in support of political objectives. Today's conflict in Viet Nam, troops in Europe, Asia, and scattered outposts throughout the rest of the world present a far different picture than that described by the first Secretary of Defense in September, 1947. At that time and in the face of imminent occupation of Trieste by Yugoslavia, Secretary Forrestal registered his apprehension of the President's order to reinforce the American garrison in Trieste because insufficient military forces were available for even their existing commitments.²⁸

²⁸Walter Millis (ed.), The Forrestal Diaries (New York: The Viking Press, 1951), pp. 313-314.

operation. These developments coincided with and caused
 revised the existing concepts of the United States political
 role in world affairs.

The effect of the changing concepts of security
 needs directly involved the utilization of the military
 forces of the United States. The military leadership
 therefore, became involved in the implementation of a new
 globally conceived security policy. The most significant
 involvement related to the building of sufficient military
 capability to allow a more flexible and effective foreign
 policy without weakening the national defense force. The
 need taken to provide sufficient military capability was
 recognized and also, but the two results have been the emergence
 of adequate military strength to provide military commu-
 nities around the globe in support of political objectives.
 Today's military in that war, Europe, Asia, and
 scattered regions throughout the rest of the world present
 a far different picture than that described by the first
 Secretary of Defense in September, 1947. At that time the
 in the line of limited operations as well as in the
 Secretary National registered his appreciation of the
 Department's order to reinforce the national defense in
 these terms: "Insufficient military forces were available
 for even their existing commitments."²⁰

²⁰ Walter Millie (ed.), *The National Defense* (New
 York: The Viking Press, 1951), pp. 117-118.

Military involvement in national security policy has been most obvious in the rebuilding of military capability since the end of World War II. The conflicts among the services and between the services and the various Administrations were reflective of military involvement in policy implementation because military capability often determines the means utilized to obtain the national objectives. The arguments which surrounded the "48 versus the 70" group Air Force involved the Air Force in a continuous struggle for several years in an attempt to build a sufficient air capability to implement the then existing policy of deterrence.²⁹ The Army's struggle for increased personnel during the lean 1950's reflected a similar involvement in policy implementation. This involvement saw the Army Chiefs of Staff fighting both the other service chiefs and the Administration for the capability to implement deterrence through what was to become known as "flexible response."³⁰

²⁹United States Congress, Senate Document No. 204, Mobilization Planning and the National Security: Problems and Issues, Prepared by the Legislative Reference Service of the Library of Congress, 81st Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1950), pp. 86-90.

³⁰Taylor, op. cit., p. 23. The theme to which General Taylor constantly refers throughout his book is the conflict and frustrations in national policy implementation although, at times, the lines between policy planning, implementation and strategy are marginally defined.

Military involvement in national security policy has been most obvious in the rebuilding of military capability since the end of World War II. The conflicts among the services and between the services and the various administrations were reflective of military involvement in policy implementation because military capability often determines the means utilized to obtain the national objectives. The arguments which surrounded the "45 versus the 70" group air force involved the air force in a continuous struggle for several years in an attempt to build a sufficient air capability to implement the then existing policy of deterrence.¹⁹ The Navy's struggle for increased participation during the late 1950's reflected a similar involvement in policy implementation. This involvement saw the Navy Chiefs of Staff fighting both the other service chiefs and the Administration for the capability to implement deterrence through what was to become known as "flexible response."²⁰

¹⁹ United States Congress, Senate Document No. 304, Mobilization Planning and the National Security, Washington, D.C., 1955, prepared by the Legislative Reference Service of the Library of Congress, 81st Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1950), pp. 34-35.

²⁰ Taylor, op. cit., p. 53. The theme of what General Taylor honestly refers throughout his book is the conflict and frustration in national policy implementation. Although, at times, the lines between policy planning, implementation and strategy are marginally defined.

Involvement of the military in policy implementation at the higher levels tend to overlap into policy planning. This occurs because capability must be constantly reviewed and evaluated by policy planners to determine the relevancy of existing policy and possible modifications required to further security goals. Therefore, military involvement in planning and actions to implement national security policy sometimes appear to be the case of the military policy tail wagging the national policy dog.

At other levels, military involvement in the implementation process has a much clearer definition, but spill-over or feedback can still influence the course of national security policy. There are obvious examples of this aspect of involvement, such as the functions of military intelligence, the role of the military commander making the vital decision as to what constitutes an overt act of aggression in some far-flung outpost, and the military decision that certain foreign bases are vital to military capability or that certain positions are no longer defensible.

Military Aid and Missions

The incorporation of military aid and advisory missions have become institutionalized in United States national security policy. The military operation and administration of the program has not been challenged although the overall program has received its share of criticism.

involvement of the military in policy implementation at the higher levels tends to overlap into policy planning. This occurs because capability must be constantly reviewed and evaluated by policy planners to determine the necessity of existing policy and possible modifications required to insure security goals. Therefore, military involvement in planning and action to implement national security policy sometimes appear to be the case of the military policy staff shaping the national policy body.

At other levels, military involvement in the implementation process has a more direct relation, but still over or through can still influence the course of national security policy. There are obvious examples of this aspect of involvement, such as the functions of military intelligence, the role of the military commander seeing the vital decision as to what constitutes an event and of operations in some military support, and the military decision that certain foreign bases are vital to military capability or that certain positions are no longer defensible.

Military Aid and Missions

The incorporation of military aid and military missions have become institutionalized in United States national security policy. The military operations and administration of the program has not been challenged through the overall program has retained its status of criticism.

The scope of military involvement in this area of policy implementation reached its peak during the rebuilding of allied military strength in Europe and Turkey and then decreased to its present level. The monetary value appropriated for the program has averaged 1.55 billion dollars since 1962.³¹

The military aid program has also evolved from its original concept of supplying friendly nations with arms and technical training in the use of these arms for external security to a more political function. Latin America is now receiving almost \$100 million annually, and this military assistance, according to Secretary McNamara, "continues to be oriented toward internal security and civic action."³²

Military aid has a direct and obvious effect on the security posture of the receiving nation. Additionally, the program places United States military officers in a position of close relations with the military elites of participating nations. This aspect becomes especially significant when one considers that, in areas where military aid

³¹United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Committee on Appropriations, Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, Hearings, 89th Cong., 2d Sess. on S.2950, February 23-March 31, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 230-231. Hereafter referred to as Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967.

³²Ibid., p. 38.

The scope of military involvement in this area of policy implementation reached its peak during the retooling of allied military strategy in Europe and Turkey and then decreased to its present level. The monetary value appropriated for the program has averaged 2.5 billion dollars since 1961.¹¹

The military aid program has also evolved from its original concept of supplying friendly nations with arms and technical training in the use of these arms for external security to a more political function. Latin America is now receiving almost 100 million annually, and this military assistance, according to Secretary McNamara, "continues to be oriented toward internal security and civic action."¹²

Military aid has a direct and obvious effect on the security posture of the receiving nation. Additionally, the program places United States military officers in a position of close relations with the military elites of participating nations. This aspect becomes especially significant when one considers that, in areas where military aid

¹¹ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Committee on Appropriations, Military Procurement Authorization for Fiscal Year 1967, hearings, 90 Cong., 2d Sess. on S. 1550, February 22-March 11, 1967 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 210-211. McNamara referred to as Military Procurement Authorization for Fiscal Year 1967.

¹² ibid., p. 26.

is most necessary, military elites or cliques are often the strongest political force in the determination of national policy. Latin America and Southeast Asia are prime examples of areas where military aid operations could have a potentially important effect on United States security policy.

Policy Representatives

Military participation in the implementation of national security policy often takes the role of representatives of the national government. A wide range of military activities could be classified under the heading of policy representation, including many of the functions previously mentioned under other categories. However, policy representation occupies a primary function of some military officers and deserves special coverage.

In the past, military participation as policy representatives has included such roles as military governors and treaty negotiators. These functions still occur periodically; however, they have lost their primacy to institutionalized representative functions. The most important policy representatives are those officers assigned to tasks in relation to the alliances.

The Supreme Allied Commander, Europe, is a significant policy representative of the United States Government. According to General Norstad, the senior American Officer in the NATO military system often finds himself concerned with

is not necessarily military either or cliques and often the strongest political forces in the determination of national policy. Latin America and Southern Asia are prime examples of areas where military aid operations could have a potentially important effect on United States security policy.

Policy Representatives

Military participation in the implementation of national security policy often takes the role of representatives of the national government. A wide range of military activities could be classified under the heading of policy representation, including many of the functions previously mentioned under other categories. However, policy representation occupies a primary function in some military officers and deserves special coverage.

In the past, military participation as policy representatives has included such roles as military government and treaty negotiators. These functions still occur periodically; however, they have lost their primacy to international representative functions. The most important policy representatives are those officers assigned to tasks in relation to the alliance.

The Supreme Allied Commander Europe, is a significant policy representative of the United States government. According to General Hottel, the senior American official in the NATO military system often finds himself concerned with

political matters as well as command functions.³³ This aspect must be equally applicable to subordinate commanders in the NATO system, such as the Supreme Allied Commander, Atlantic, and the Commander in Chief, Southern Europe. United States representatives to the Military Committee and the Standing Group of NATO also reflect the nation's security policy in their formulation of NATO's strategic and military policies.³⁴

Military representation in other treaty organizations, such as the Organization of American States and the South-East Treaty Organization, also reflects military involvement in policy implementation.

Yet, policy representation is not always restricted to lofty levels. Actions or even the presence of military commanders and the private soldier in a foreign nation may be interpreted by government leadership or public opinion as reflecting United States policy. Thus, the presence of American troops in Europe came to be recognized as assurance of United States policy to become involved in military

³³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, The Atlantic Alliance, Hearings before its Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., May 5-6, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 65-90.

³⁴The South-East Asia Treaty Organization, Collective Security: Shield of Freedom (Bangkok, Thailand: Published by SEATO, 1963), p. 70.

political matters as well as command functions.³² This aspect must be equally applicable to subordinate commanders in the NATO system, such as the Supreme Allied Commander, Atlantic, and the Commander in Chief, Southern Europe. United States representatives to the Military Committee and the Standing Group of NATO also reflect the nation's security policy in their formulation of NATO's strategic and military policies.³³

Military representation in other treaty organizations, such as the Organization of American States and the North-East Asia Treaty Organization, also reflects military involvement in policy implementation. Yet, policy representation is not always restricted to policy levels. Action at even the presence of military commands and the private soldier in a foreign nation may be influenced by government leadership of public opinion as reflected United States policy. Thus, the presence of American troops in Europe came to be recognized as assurance of United States policy to become involved in military

³²United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, The Atlantic Alliance, Hearing Before the Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 85 Cong., 2d Sess., May 2-6, 1966 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966), pp. 25-30.

³³The North-East Asia Treaty Organization, Policy Statement, Table of Contents (London, United Kingdom: Published by NATO, 1967), p. 10.

action before the destruction of Europe could be effected by a possible Russian attack.³⁵ The deployment of troops has a significance in relations which affect security policy. This significance has been recognized and made the subject of past study. One such study, the investigation by the Bendetsen Committee from the Department of Defense, pointed out that "the only face of America which countless foreigners see is a military face: by it they tend to judge our nation." The committee went on to report that the military face had been found representative of the United States and a credit to the nation.³⁶

III. THE SUBTLE INFLUENCE

The choice of "The Subtle Influence" as a sub-heading may be considered by many as a misnomer or even an act of naïveté. However, even with the obvious influence of defense spending, publicity surrounding the military effort and interaction of domestic and military policy, the threat to the "American way of life," whatever that may be, is less dangerous in the short run than alarmists have predicted. Again, it is necessary to differentiate between

³⁵ Burton M. Sapin and Richard C. Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954), pp. 16-17.

³⁶ Gavin, op. cit., p. 135.

action before the admission of Europe could be effected by a general Russian attack.¹⁵ The dependence of Europe has a significance in relations which affect security policy. This significance has been recognized and made the subject of past study. One such study, the investigation by the American Commission from the Department of Defense, included one fact: the only fact of history which continues to be seen in a military face: by it they tend to judge our nation. The commission went on to report that the military too had been found representative of the United States and a credit to the nation.¹⁶

III. THE MILITARY INFLUENCE

The choice of "The Military Influence" as a sub-heading may be considered by many as a statement of fact or of a statement of opinion. However, even with the choice influence of defense spending, publicly surrounding the military effort and instruction of domestic and military policy, the choice in the "American way of life" whatever may be, is less dangerous in the short run than choices have previously. Again, it is necessary to differentiate between

¹⁵ Norton M. Sasser and Richard C. Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954), pp. 14-17.

¹⁶ Devin, op. cit., p. 155.

the military officer corps and the militarists who may or may not be connected with the military officer corps but definitely do not dominate this group.

Public Opinion

The military has a definite interest in maintaining a good public image. The military budget is dependent upon convincing Congress directly and the public indirectly that all monies requested will be effectively employed for national security. The recruitment and retention of a leadership corps depends upon the public image maintained by the military. And major differences in strategic concepts rely, to some extent, on the prestige and respect held by the military leadership.

At one time, the correct image could be expressed for all military purposes in the simple but poignant creed of West Point—"Duty, Honor, Country." This creed, so well exemplified by the hero generals and admirals of World War II, lost much of its lustre by the early 1960's. The glamorous hero fell before the onrush of technology and had to be replaced by the image of the professional soldier as a specialist in administration, diplomacy, business, engineering and many other skills. At the same time, it was necessary to maintain the aura of a broad general experience

the military officer corps and the military who may or may not be connected with the military officer corps but definitely do not dominate this group.

Public Opinion

The military has a definite interest in maintaining a good public image. The military budget is dependent upon convincing Congress directly and the public indirectly that all monies requested will be effectively employed for national security. The recruitment and retention of a leadership corps depends upon the public image maintained by the military. And major differences in strategic concepts rely, to some extent, on the prestige and respect held by the military leadership.

At one time, the correct image could be expressed for all military purposes in the single but poignant creed of past generations: "Duty, Honor, Country." This creed, so well exemplified by the hero generals and admirals of World War II, lost much of its luster by the early 1950's. The Americans have felt before the onrush of technology and had to be replaced by the image of the professional soldier as a specialist in combat, aviation, diplomacy, business, engineering and many other skills. At the same time, it was necessary to maintain the aura of a broad general experience

to increase the credibility of the military leadership in the strategic area.³⁷

The problems of creating a totally successful image appear of impossible magnitude. Yet, the military receives strong aid in the form of residual hero worship from World War II. The establishment also maintains public relations offices which strive to reflect the correct image.³⁸ Successive Administrations have also supported the prestige and expertise of the military leadership for the expediency of policy legitimacy.³⁹ Another source of support has been that given by members of Congress who have utilized military opponents of Administration policy when the opposition coincided with that existing in Congress.⁴⁰ Additionally, the military have enjoyed a demand for their services as orators because national security is a vital public issue and because the tradition of military non-partisanism makes these speakers broadly acceptable.

The military establishment cooperates with a wide range of media for purposes of public opinion. The motion

³⁷Huntington, "Power Expertise and the Military Profession," op. cit., pp. 184-185 and 193.

³⁸Raymond, op. cit., p. 201.

³⁹Gavin, op. cit., p. 168.

⁴⁰Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, op. cit., p. 147.

to increase the credibility of the military leadership in the strategic area.³⁷

The problem of creating a carefully successful image of the military leadership is not an easy one. Yet, the military leadership stands in the face of a world which has been shaped by war. The establishment also maintains public relations officers whose active role is to reflect the correct image.³⁸

Executive administrations have also supported the prestige and expertise of the military leadership for the expediency of policy legitimacy.³⁹ Another source of support has been

that given by members of Congress who have utilized military opponents of administration policy when the opposition coincided with that existing in Congress.⁴⁰ Additionally,

the military have enjoyed a demand for their services as officers because national security is a vital public issue and because the tradition of military non-partisanship makes these positions broadly acceptable.

The military establishment cooperates with a wide range of media for purposes of public opinion. The notion

³⁷ Huntington, "Power, Expertise and the Military Profession," pp. 184-185 and 187.

³⁸ Ibid., pp. 184-185 and 187.

³⁹ Ibid., pp. 184-185 and 187.

⁴⁰ Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Process and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, pp. 217, p.

picture industry has found the military most cooperative in producing movies which reflect the military profession in a favorable light. News columnists who are sympathetic to military policy appear to enjoy extra sources of policy information in the form of news "leaks." Professional military journals and newspapers are also valuable links in the process of image building.

The process of building the proper image in the public's mind has not been too successful even with so many factors in the military's favor. In this respect, the officer corps has been its own worst enemy. The fierce conflicts over unification and continuing differences in strategic concepts have cast doubt in the public's mind as to the true degree of military expertise in the nation's policy process. The occasional charges of conflict of interest which have been leveled against high-ranking military officers linger in the public's awareness much longer than do the unspectacular public relations news handouts. The activities of retired officers who have become leaders of the "radical right" also make better news coverage than the vast majority of retired officers who have taken a more moderate political stand and have blended productively into civilian life.

The military's reliance on a favorable public opinion for personnel recruitment and retention, budgetary

picture industry has found the military most cooperative in producing movies which reflect the military profession in a favorable light. News columnists who are sympathetic to military policy appear to enjoy using sources of policy information in the form of news "leaks." Professional military journals and newspapers are also valuable lines in the process of image building.

The process of building the proper image in the public's mind has not been too successful even with so many factors in the military's favor. In this respect, the officer corps has been let down more easily. The friction conflicts over unification and continuing differences in strategic concepts have cast doubt in the public's mind as to the true degree of military expertise in the nation's policy process. The occasional charges of conflict of interest which have been leveled against high-ranking military officials living in the public's awareness have furthered this. Then do the unpopularity public relations have become. The activities of retired officers who have become leaders of the "radical right" also make better news coverage than the vast majority of retired officers who have taken a more moderate political stand and have blended productively into civilian life.

The military's reliance on a favorable public opinion for personnel recruitment and retention, budgetary

requirements, and policy support necessitates involvement in this area. Yet, the requirement to project a good public image may impair the effectiveness of military expertise in those cases where political expediency is practiced to retain a favorable public opinion. Additionally, too much or improper involvement in the molding of public opinion could backfire and leave the impression that the military establishment is just another narrow based pressure group.

Economic Impact

Spending for national defense has reached an awesome level. The appropriations requested by the Secretary of Defense in March, 1966, for fiscal year 1967 exceeded 59 billion dollars.⁴¹ And a supplemental request was later necessary to meet rising costs of the conflict in Viet Nam. The sheer magnitude of the sums involved in supporting the nation's military power has caused considerable concern for its impact on the overall national economy as well as specific areas such as welfare spending and the concentration of prosperity in defense industries.

The fear that huge defense budgets might drastically endanger the domestic economy has somewhat diminished on the

⁴¹Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, op. cit., p. 4.

regimented, and policy support necessitates involvement in this area. Yet, the requirement to project a good public image may impair the effectiveness of military support in those cases where political expediency is necessary to retain a favorable public opinion. Additionally, the need for Japanese involvement in the holding of public opinion could backfire and leave the Japanese with the military establishment in just another nation-based pressure group.

Economic Impact

Spending for national defense has reached an average level. The appropriations requested by the Secretary of Defense in March, 1961, for fiscal year 1962 amounted to \$11.5 billion dollars.⁴¹ And a supplemental request was later necessary to meet rising costs of the conflict in Viet Nam. The sheer magnitude of the sums involved in supporting the nation's military power has caused considerable concern for its impact on the overall national economy as well as specific areas such as welfare spending and the concentration of resources in defense industries.

The fact that huge defense budgets might drastically endanger the domestic economy has somewhat diminished on the

⁴¹ Military Appropriations for Fiscal Year 1962, pp. 1-2.

basis of experiences with the Korean War and subsequent crisis spending on such matters as the space race. In these cases, it has been determined that an increased defense budget reasonably proportioned to the gross national product (GNP) does not seriously upset the national economy.⁴² Yet, the spectre of a mobilized civilian economy to support the military's spending exists and the public generally accepts the thesis that the military leadership dominates the civilian economy simply through the enormity of the defense budget.

A review of statistics reveals that the military establishment is truly an economic power. For instance, in 1966, the amount of money budgeted for military personnel pay, subsistence and related expenses amounted to 16.9 billion dollars. Over 19.9 billion dollars were utilized for procurement of weapons, weapons systems, and general housekeeping items. Military construction, including family housing, accounted for over 3 billion dollars.⁴³ As of June, 1965, the total value of Department of Defense real and personal property amounted to 176.2 billion dollars. While the majority of this inventory, 85 billion

⁴²Henry S. Rowen, "Defense and the Economy," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 124-126.

⁴³Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, op. cit., pp. 3-4.

basis of experience with the Korean War and subsequent
 crisis spending on such matters as the space race. In
 other cases, it has been determined that an increased ex-
 penditure is reasonably proportional to the gross national
 product (GNP) and not necessarily equal to the national eco-
 nomy.¹² Yet, the question of a mobilized civilian economy
 to support the military's spending habits and the public
 generally accepts the thesis that the military leadership
 oversees the civilian economy simply through the annuality
 of the defense budget.

A review of statistics reveals that the military
 establishment is truly an economic power. For instance, in
 1966, the amount of money budgeted for military personnel
 pay, subsistence and related expenses amounted to 16.4
 billion dollars. Over 15.9 billion dollars were allotted
 for procurement of weapons, weapons systems, and general
 housekeeping items. Military construction, including
 family housing, accounted for over 1 billion dollars.¹³ As
 of June, 1963, the total value of Department of Defense
 real and personal property amounted to 176.1 billion dol-
 lars. While the majority of this inventory, 62 billion

¹² Henry J. Brown, "Defense and the Economy," *Washington
 Defense Policy*, pp. 215, 27, 114-116.

¹³ *Annual Report of the Secretary of Defense*, pp. 215, 27, 114-116.

dollars, consisted of weapons and supporting equipment, the military establishment also owned a substantial real estate holding valued at 37.6 billion dollars and consisting of 420,000 acres of land. The value of the real estate must be considered as most conservative because estimates were based on purchase price, without appreciation. Lands donated or taken out of the public domain were not appraised or estimated but rather treated as having zero value in the total valuation. The various military services and the Department of Defense rented additional land and facilities during the year ending June 30, 1965, at a cost of 34.99 million dollars. The total land controlled by the Defense Department totaled 30.9 million acres as of June 30, 1965.⁴⁴

Two of the four rough indices utilized by Huntington to evaluate the political influence of the military are related to economic matters. These indices include the economic and human resources available to the military leadership and the group affiliations with inservice contacts, such as industry.⁴⁵ Indiscriminate use of this

⁴⁴United States Department of Defense, Office of the Controller, Real and Personal Property of the Department of Defense as of 30 June 1965, Report submitted to the President and to Congress, pp. 2-3, 14-15, 22 and 35.

⁴⁵Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., pp. 88-89.

collected, consisted of weapons and supporting equipment; the military establishment also owned a substantial real estate holding valued at 37.5 billion dollars and consisting of 450,000 acres of land. The value of the real estate must be considered as more conservative because valuations were based on purchase price, without appreciation. Lands donated or taken out of the public domain were not appraised or estimated but rather treated as having zero value in the total valuation. The various military services and the Department of Defense owned additional land and facilities during the year ending June 30, 1955, at a cost of \$4.97 billion dollars. The total land controlled by the Defense Department totaled 10.9 million acres, as of June 30, 1955.⁴⁴

Two of the four rough indices utilized by Huntington to evaluate the political influence of the military are related to economic matters. These indices include the economic and human resources available to the military leadership and the group affiliations with business concerns, such as industry.⁴⁵

⁴⁴United States Department of Defense, Office of the Comptroller, Real and Personal Property of the Department of Defense as of June 1955, Report submitted to the Senate and to Congress, pp. 2-3, 14-15, 22 and 23.

⁴⁵Huntington, The Military and the State, pp. 411-412.

concept could easily lead to an evaluation of military influence far in excess of reality. The key limitation of the concept rests in the determination of what resources are actually available to the military leadership. This aspect of evaluation appears to be missing in the statement of Professor Swomley:

No activity of the military is more dangerous to American Democracy than its economic program. This program . . . is an illustration both of "creeping militarism" and of the military's conscious planning for power.⁴⁶

The restraints on the availability of resources to the military leadership appear quite formidable. The budget, in which military resources ultimately rest, is by law and practice the responsibility of the civilian leadership. In addition to the budget restraints imposed by the Secretary of Defense, the Budget Bureau and Congress, the General Accounting Office also audits the utilization of resources. In this respect, the General Accounting Office is probably the most effective government check against a misuse of economic or human resources because this organization is specifically charged with detailed auditing of "administration of funds and the utilization of property and personnel."⁴⁷

⁴⁶ John M. Swomley, The Military Establishment (Boston: Beacon Press, 1964), p. 99.

⁴⁷ Government Organization Manual, op. cit., p. 35.

though could easily lead to an evaluation of military involvement as an answer to reality. The key limitation of the current report is the determination of what resources are actually available to the military leadership. This report of the report appears to be stated in the statement of Professor Smith:

The reality of the military is more dangerous to American democracy than the economic system. This is an ill-considered view of the military's role in the nation's security and of the military's role in the nation's security.

The reality of the military is more dangerous to the military leadership than the economic system. The report, in which military resources are primarily used, is not and practice the responsibility of the civilian leadership. In addition to the budget constraints imposed by the necessity of defense, the budget for the military, the report, suggesting that the military also has the responsibility of resources. In this regard, the general leadership office is probably the most effective government check against a misuse of economic or human resources because this organization is specifically charged with detailed analysis of the military's role of funds and the utilization of property and personnel.

John A. Smith, *The Military Establishment*

London: London Press, 1971, p. 73.

Government Organization Bureau, p. 112, p. 13.

The group affiliations of industry and the officer corps present another problem. There can be little doubt that some conflict of interest has occurred in this area. However, those cases publicized and substantiated have been questions of personal integrity rather than covert attempts to increase consciously the military influence in economic matters. When charges of interest conflict have been substantiated, severe punitive actions have resulted.⁴⁸

The possible effects of the large number of retired military officers in defense industries has recurred periodically. Concern for this situation was the subject of Congressional hearings in the 1950's. One investigation by the Herbert Subcommittee determined that over fourteen hundred retired officers with the rank of major and above held positions in one hundred leading defense industries. Included in this number were 261 generals or admirals. One prime contractor, General Dynamics, was headed by a former Army Secretary and employed twenty-seven retired generals and admirals. Despite the numbers involved, the Herbert Subcommittee hearings produced no evidence of venality or misconduct and, at most, some cases of cloudy issues.⁴⁹

Even though the personal integrity of a few

⁴⁸Raymond, op. cit., pp. 205-207.

⁴⁹Ibid., pp. 207-210.

The group affiliations of industry and the other
 large present sector groups. There can be little doubt
 that some conflict of interest has occurred in this case.
 However, these cases published and substantiated have been
 questions of personal integrity rather than cover attempts
 to increase considerably the military influence in economic
 matters. When charges of interest conflict have been sub-
 stantiated, severe punitive actions have resulted.⁴⁵
 The possible effects of the large number of retired
 military officers in defense industries has received little
 official comment for this situation was the subject of
 Congressional hearings in the 1950's. The investigation by
 the Senate Subcommittee determined that over four hundred
 retired officers with the rank of major and above
 held positions in one hundred leading defense industries.
 Included in this number were 501 generals or admirals. One
 page contract, General Dynamics, was headed by a former
 Army secretary and retired Army major called William
 and William. Besides the number involved, the Senate
 Subcommittee hearings produced no evidence of conflict of
 interest and, at worst, some cases of minor issues.⁴⁶
 Even though the personal loyalty of a few

⁴⁵ *ibid.*, pp. 103-107.

⁴⁶ *ibid.*, pp. 107-110.

individual military officers has proven inadequate in the past and the situation may be repeated in the future, the best interests of national security policy requires contacts and intercourse between the military and industry. Industry has the means of producing the innovations and discoveries which are vital to national defense in the technological era. The military has the expertise of the user which is necessary to give direction to industry's skills. The small degradation to national security caused by an occasional unethical act is far overshadowed by the overall benefits of the system.

Social Impact

The determination of specific changes in societal values from increased military involvement in national security policy cannot be measured or proven. Yet, the emergence of a new leadership group must affect the society in which it operates. The problems encountered in attempting to isolate or validate attitude transformations involve too many variables and uncertainties to make a cursory study worthwhile. However, specific involvements of the military can be noted with the logical expectation that these will act on societal values and attitudes.

⁴⁹Ibid., pp. 207-210.

individual military officers has grown rapidly in the past and the situation may be repeated in the future, the best interests of national security require close bonds and intercourses between the military and industry. Industry has the means of producing the innovations and discoveries which are vital to national defense in the technological era. The military has the experience of the war which is necessary to give direction to industry's skills. The small degradation to national security caused by an occasional unethical act is far outweighed by the overall benefits to the system.

Social Impact

The determination of specific changes in societal values from increased military involvement in national security policy cannot be measured or proven. Yet, the emergence of a new leadership group must affect the society in which it operates. The problems encountered in attempting to isolate or validate attitude transformations involve too many variables and uncertainties to make a cursory study worthwhile. However, specific involvements of the military can be noted with the logical expectation that these will act on societal values and attitudes.

Perhaps, the greatest impact on social attitudes has involved the transformation in the American approach to war and the use of military power. The traditional attitude that political and military power were separate entities has changed to a recognition of the necessary balancing of military means to political ends. The latter attitude was strongly supported by the military long before World War II, but its acceptance by the American public was not forthcoming until the cold war created circumstances conducive to the creation of the National Security Council, a device specifically constructed to harmonize military power with political policy.⁵⁰

The vast number of non-careerists who have served in the Armed Forces and then returned to society must have retained values or attitudes generated by their experiences in the military establishment. The impact of this group on society can be seen now only in the possible effects of the various veteran groups and influential individuals who openly profess certain attitudes as the result of military training. The overall impact of armed forces experiences must necessarily wait for a valid scientific study of the military mind.

⁵⁰Robert E. Osgood, "The American Approach to War," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 105-109.

... perhaps, the greatest impact on social attitudes was
involved was transformation in the American approach to war
and the use of military power. The traditional attitude
was political and military power were separate entities
has changed to a recognition of the necessary blending of
military means to political ends. The latter attitude was
strongly supported by the military long before World War II,
but its acceptance by the American public was not forthcoming
until the mid war period. Circumstances conducive to
the creation of the National Security Council, a device
specifically constituted to harmonize military power with
political policy.⁵⁰

The vast number of non-careerists who have served in
the armed forces and then returned to society must have
retained values or attitudes generated by their experiences
in the military establishment. The impact of this group on
society can be seen not only in the possible effects of the
various veteran groups and influential individuals who
openly profess certain attitudes as the result of military
training. The overall impact of armed forces experiences
must necessarily wait for a valid scientific study of the
military mind.

⁵⁰ Robert E. Good, "The American Approach to War,"
American Defense Policy, pp. 102-103.

Military involvement in educational institutions also must have some effect on society. This involvement includes the various Reserve Officers Training Corps at the University and high-school level and the research grants supplied to various colleges and universities. In the latter case, over 240 institutions received Department of Defense grants totaling more than 289 million dollars in 1965.⁵¹ While the grants were for military research projects, the end result should aid the schools involved in a financial way and, thus, provide education to more students or improve the quality of education. The extension of grants for research and for the ROTC programs also has an adverse effect which may be lost in its subtlety. If the institution expands or makes commitments on the basis of Defense Department grants, the school has assumed a reliance on and interest in defense matters. The question then arises as to whether recipients of grants can maintain an attitude of objectivity toward the project involved or toward national security in general.

The idea of a subtle influence on American society may appear dubious in the light of the obvious impact of the defense budget. However, a democracy seldom has to

⁵¹Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967, op. cit., pp. 447-449.

Military involvement in educational institutions also must have some effect on society. This involvement includes the various Reserve Officers Training Corps at the university and high-school level and the research grants supplied to various colleges and universities. In the latter case, over \$10 million have been received by the Defense Grants totaling more than \$25 million dollars in 1965.²¹ While the grants were for military research projects, the end result should also be the schools involved in a financial way and, thus, provide education to more students or improve the quality of education. The expansion of grants for research and for the ROTC programs also has an adverse effect which may be lost in the military. If the institution expands or makes commitments on the basis of Defense Department grants, the school has assumed a responsibility on and interest in defense matters. The question then arises as to whether recipients of grants can maintain an attitude of objectivity toward the projects involved or toward national security in general.

The loss of a subtle influence on American society may appear trivial in the light of the obvious impact of the defense budget. However, a democracy seldom has to

²¹ Military Involvement in Educational Institutions for Fiscal Year 1965, pp. 215-217.

fear those functions of any societal group which operates under the glare of publicity and political and statutory restrictions. The danger to a democracy from such a group is derived from the almost hidden and never measurable effects on societal values. How long can a society bear the burden of ever-rising defense without either becoming outraged and endangering national security or becoming so conditioned to huge defense budgets that more and more political functions could be hidden in their immensity? What are the chances that increased civilian intervention in military expertise matters may cause military frustration and increased political activity on the part of the military leaders? Other questions involving the use of the military in social and economic matters and its possible effects on military and civilian values must be considered. These questions require evaluation based on long-run potentials and the answers derived must be calculated to strike a proper balance which will benefit both national security and democratic values.

The preceding discussion has considered the degree of military involvement in policy planning and implementation and national domestic life. Some of the means through which the military exert their influence have been described without recourse to evaluation to their legitimacy or propriety. The following chapter will attempt to analyze

year these functions of any societal group which operates
 under the guise of publicity and political and statutory
 institutions. The danger to a democracy lies not in group
 is derived from the almost hidden and never recognized
 effects on societal values. How long can a society bear
 the burden of ever-rising defense without either becoming
 bankrupt and endangering national security or subjected to
 conditions to huge defense budgets that more and more
 political functions could be hidden in their immediacy
 that are the chances that forgotten civilian involvements
 in military operations affect and cause military frustra-
 tion and increased political activity on the part of the
 military leaders. Other questions involving the role of the
 military in social and economic matters and its possible
 effects on military and civilian values must be considered.
 These questions require evaluation based on independent points
 of view and the progress achieved must be calculated on a
 proper basis which will benefit both national security
 and domestic values.

The preceding discussion has considered the nature
 of military involvement in policy planning and implementa-
 tion and national domestic life. Some of the means through
 which the military exert their influence have been described
 without however be restricted to state military or
 properly. The following chapter will attempt to analyze

military means of influence in order that they may form a perspective for considering an appropriate military role.

efficiency of influence in order that they may have a
preparative for exercising an appropriate efficiency.

The following is a list of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

the subjects of the various subjects which are

CHAPTER V

MEANS OF INFLUENCE AND AN APPROPRIATE MILITARY ROLE

The means by which interest groups project their influence have long been studied for indications of their effectiveness and power within the political structure. Although the military group differs in some respects from the ordinary pressure group, observation of means used to project military influence should provide a degree of validity to an analysis of their relative power position within the national security process. In turn, such an analysis should lead to the structuring of a more appropriate role for the military in the policy process.

I. EFFECTUATING MILITARY INFLUENCE

Variations and complexities surround military efforts to influence national policy. The efforts vary from concentrated actions of the complete military establishment to efforts on the part of individual officers to influence all or some part of the nation's policy. The means used to influence policy can also vary from highly-legal and appropriate measures to efforts bordering on or submerged in illegitimacy. Observation and analysis are made more

MEANS OF INFLUENCE AND AN APPROPRIATE

MILITARY ROLE

The means by which interest groups project their influence have long been studied for indications of their effectiveness and power within the political structure. Although the military group differs in some respects from the ordinary pressure group, observation of means used to project military influence should provide a degree of validity to an analysis of their relative power position within the national security process. In turn, such an analysis should lead to the structuring of a more appropriate role for the military in the policy process.

I. EVOLVING MILITARY INFLUENCE

Variations and complexities surround military efforts to influence national policy. The efforts vary from concentrated actions of the complete military establishment to efforts on the part of individual officers to influence all or some part of the nation's policy. The means used to influence policy can also vary from highly-legal and approved means to efforts bordering on or amounting to illegality. Observation and analysis are made more

difficult by the fact that, in many cases, multiple efforts which involve both proper and improper methods are prevalent.

Bearing in mind the problems involved in classification and analysis, there appear to be three predominant categories of military influence--legitimate, quasi-legitimate, and illegitimate. Legitimate influence must be defined as those efforts which are properly exerted within the national security organization as recognized by the "National Security Act of 1947" and the legally-constituted Department of Defense hierarchy. Quasi-legitimate influence pertains to the areas which cannot be closely regulated by law or directives because it involves tradition and the intangibles of personalities and political prestige. The third category of illegitimacy involves acts which are in clear opposition to legality, tradition, or ethical conduct. While the mere act of classification implies value judgment and, therefore, subjectivity, the evaluator will attempt to use only clear-cut and widely-recognized values in the following observations.

Legitimate Means of Influence

The classification of legitimacy does not imply "right" or "wrong" because, in the broader context, this judgment must be founded on whether the results benefited national security without damaging the form of government or democratic principles chosen by the electorate.

difficult by the fact that, in many cases, multiple efforts which involve both proper and improper methods are prevalent. Bearing in mind the problems involved in classification and analysis, there appear to be three predominant categories of military intelligence--legitimate, quasi-legitimate, and illegitimate. Legitimate intelligence was defined as those efforts which are properly executed within the national security organization as recognized by the National Security Act of 1947 and the legally-constituted Department of Defense hierarchy. Quasi-legitimate intelligence pertains to the areas which cannot be closely regulated by law or directives because it involves tradition and the independence of personalities and political groups. The third category of illegitimacy involves acts which are in clear opposition to legality, tradition, or ethical conduct. While the mere act of classification implies value judgment and, therefore, subjectivity, the evaluator will attempt to use only clear-cut and widely-recognized values in the following observations:

Legitimate Means of Influence

The classification of legitimacy does not imply "right" or "wrong" because, in the broader context, this judgment must be founded on whether the results benefited national security without damaging the form of government or democratic principles chosen by the electorate.

Within the framework of legitimacy as reflected by the "National Security Act of 1947" and the military and civilian hierarchy of the Department of Defense, military efforts to influence national policy are limited to advice and recommendation. This function is best exemplified by the "Joint Strategic Objectives Plan" of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. However, many other important functions in this area have evolved in which the studies or proposals of the Joint Staff, through the Joint Chiefs or of the various military departments through their civilian secretaries, reach the Secretary of Defense, the National Security Council, or the President in the form of proposed policy recommendations or policy alternatives. The number of policy studies which have been requested of the military leadership is reflected in the growth of the Joint Staff from one hundred officers in 1947 to the statutory four-hundred officer limit of today.

Another aspect of legitimacy could be classified as vertical liaison. This function differs from the area of advice because it encompasses degrees of coercion or compromise which are pragmatic features of political reality. Huntington assesses this phenomenon as a general bureaucratic feature applicable to the national security hierarchy. He explains the process by noting that "as one moves up a hierarchy the links in the chain of command

... within the framework of legitimacy as reflected by the National Security Act of 1947 and the military and civilian hierarchy of the Department of Defense, military efforts to influence national policy are limited to advice and recommendations. This function is best exemplified by the Joint Strategic Objectives Plan of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. However, many other important functions in this area have evolved in which the studios or proposals of the Joint Staff, through the Joint Chiefs or of the various military departments through their civilian assistants, reach the Secretary of Defense, the National Security Council, or the President in the form of proposed policy recommendations or policy alternatives. The number of policy studies which have been prepared by the military leadership is reflected in the growth of the Joint Staff from one hundred officers in 1947 to the statutory four-hundred officer limit of today. Another aspect of legitimacy could be classified as vertical liaison. This function differs from the area of advice because it encompasses degrees of coercion or compulsion which are pragmatic features of political reality. Huntington assumes this phenomenon as a powerful bureaucratic feature applicable to the national security hierarchy. He explains the process by noting that "as one moves up a hierarchy the links in the chain of command

weaken and even tend to dissolve."¹ Yet, this feature was implicitly recognized and, to a degree, accepted by both the Administration and Congress during various hearings on national security organization as a means of denying too much power to either the Secretary of Defense or the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. It was specifically incorporated in the provision that gave service secretaries access to Congress.

Vertical liaison is not always clearly delineated. However, under certain conditions, the results of negotiations and compromise can be distinguished or interpreted over a period of time. In this respect, the continuing efforts of the Air Force to retain the manned bomber in its weapons mix clearly reflects vertical liaison. The differences between the Air Force position and that of the Administration, as reflected by Secretary McNamara, has moved ever closer to a compromise. The differences in positions taken on the manned bomber become especially clear when Secretary McNamara's testimony before Congress in 1961 and 1966 is examined.² The Secretary's original position of

¹Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, ed. Wesley W. Posvar et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965), pp. 150-151.

²United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year

weak and even seem to dissolve.¹ Yet, this feature was implicitly recognized and, as a result, accepted by both the Administration and Congress during various hearings on national security organization as a means of denying too much power to either the Secretary of Defense or the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. It was specifically incorporated in the provision that gave service secretaries access to Congress. Vertical liaison is not always clearly delineated. However, under certain conditions, the results of negotiations and compromise can be distinguished as incorporated over a period of time. In this respect, the continuing efforts of the Air Force to retain the manned bomber in its weapons mix clearly reflect vertical liaison. The differences between the Air Force position and that of the Administration, as reflected by Secretary McNamara, has moved ever closer to a compromise. The differences in positions taken on the manned bomber become especially clear when Secretary McNamara's testimony before Congress in 1961 and 1962 is examined.² The secretary's original position of

¹ Samuel V. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy, ed. Wesley C. Foster et al. (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1962), pp. 120-121.

² United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services, Military Establishment: Fiscal Year

phasing out the manned bomber changed significantly in favor of an undetermined mix of bombers and missiles, while the Air Force modified its demands for a particular bomber such as the B-70 to a plane with more versatility. The interplay between the Administration and the Air Force was recognized by the news media in the dramatic revelations of the McNamara-Lemay differences of opinion.³ The conversion of positions was further reflected in a recent news item which indicated that Secretary of the Air Force Harold Brown, a prime figure in opposition to the manned bomber during his tenure as Director of Defense Research and Engineering, was now in favor of the manned bomber to increase United States military superiority.⁴

Vertical liaison rather than hierarchal influence was apparent in the efforts of the Joint Chiefs to determine criterion for the 1947 disarmament negotiations. In this case, the Joint Chiefs were not willing to talk about conventional weapons until nuclear disarmament had been agreed upon. Military influence, in this case, amounted to

1962, Hearings, 87th Cong., 1st Sess., April 4-19, 1961 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961), p. 82; and United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Committee on Appropriations, Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967.

³Article in The New York Times, May 16, 1962, p. 1.

⁴Article in The Washington Post, February 3, 1967.

claiming that the revised budget changed significantly in favor of an undetermined six of hundreds and thousands, while the Air Force retained its demands for a particular number such as the 100 to a plane with more versatility. The disparity between the Administration and the Air Force was recognized by the new staff in the general evaluation of the Air Force's differences of opinion.² The comparison of positions was further reflected in a recent note from which indicated that necessity of the Air Force would be a prime theme in opposition to the general concept during his tenure as director of defense research and development, was now in favor of the rapid pace to increase United States military expenditures.³ Technical liaison rather than technical influence was apparent in the offices of the Joint Chiefs to whom some criticism for the 1947 disarmament negotiations. In this case, the Joint Chiefs were not willing to take more conventional measures until nuclear disarmament had been agreed upon. Military influence in this case, however, was

1947, Washington, D.C. Comp., 1st sess., April 24-25, 1947 (Washington—Government Printing Office, 1947), p. 101 and United States Congress, Senate Committee on Armed Forces and Subcommittee on Department of Defense by the Committee on Appropriations, Subcommittee on Appropriations for Fiscal Year 1948.

²Article in The New York Times, Nov. 12, 1947, p. 1.

³Article in The Washington Post, February 1, 1947.

more than simply making a recommendation because it led to conflict which had to be resolved by the President and the military's policy became national policy over the opposition of the nation's U.N. representative on disarmament.⁵

Another legitimate military means of influencing policy can be classified as horizontal liaison. In this area can be placed the military's functions of policy coordination, including testimony before Congress. Many examples of military influence through policy coordination have been previously mentioned; however, few of these cases were analyzed on the basis of legitimacy. The policy-making structure recognizes and emphasizes policy coordination and the consultative process, but not all cases of coordination fall within the realm of legitimacy. Thus, the Senior Interdepartmental Group's decision on a course of action determined on the basis of military capability analysis would be a legitimate use of influence. However, if the decision could hinge on several military contingencies and the military participants arbitrarily restrict the alternatives to favor a particular viewpoint, the legitimacy of military influence has been abrogated.

Stanley attributes the ability to exert influence in the horizontal plane as resulting from the military being

⁵Walter Millis (ed.), The Forrestal Diaries (New York: The Viking Press, 1951), p. 327.

from even simply making a recommendation because it led to
 conflict which had to be resolved by the President and the
 military's policy became national policy over the opposi-
 tion of the nation's U.S. representative in Washington.
 American legislative military means of influencing
 policy can be classified as national affairs. In this
 area can be placed the military's function of policy coordi-
 nation, including testimony before Congress. Many
 examples of military influence through policy coordination
 have been previously mentioned; however, few of these cases
 were analyzed on the basis of legislative. The policy-
 making structure recognizes and emphasizes policy coordina-
 tion and the consultative process, but not all cases of
 coordination fall within the realm of legislative. Thus,
 the senior interdepartmental group's decision on a course
 of action is determined on the basis of military capability
 analysis would be a legislative use of influence. However,
 if the decision could hinge on several military considera-
 tions and the military participation is strictly routine the
 character is toward a particular viewpoint, the legis-
 lative or military influence has been suggested.
 Under situations the military is used in influence in
 the national plan as resulting from the military being

activists who are willing to fill the vacuum created by the lack of civilian leadership.⁶ Yet, forcefulness and decisiveness are not enough to assure influence. The military's best device for converting their civilian counterparts is the well-developed staff paper which not only takes a stand on a particular issue but also offers impressive data to back the stand. Additionally, the military leadership is likely to offer a well-developed program to accomplish the recommended objective.

Another means of adding prestige to military recommendations in the horizontal coordination process is the prestige of a unified military position. This aspect of military influence produces a semblance of military unification near that expected to the Unification Act. During the period from 1947 to 1956, less than 10 per cent of all Joint Chiefs of Staff actions resulted in split issues.⁷ General Gavin stated that, although internal JCS disagreement over parochial issues usually resulted in a 2-1 vote, unified agreement was generally reported out in order that the decision remained a military one and, therefore, retained greater weight.⁸

⁶ Timothy W. Stanley, American Defense and National Security (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1956), p. 46.

⁷ Samuel P. Huntington, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," op. cit., p. 157.

⁸ James M. Gavin, War and Peace in the Space Age (New

activists who are willing to fill the vacuum created by the lack of civilian leadership.⁶ Yet, forcefulness and determination are not enough to assure influence. The military's past device for converting their civilian counterparts is the well-developed staff paper which not only places a stand on a particular issue but also offers imperative data to back the stand. Additionally, the military leadership is likely to offer a well-developed program to accomplish the recommended objective.

Another means of adding prestige to military recommendations is the horizontal consultation process. This aspect of prestige of a limited military position. This aspect of military influence produces a semblance of military consultation that was reported to the Washington Post during the period from 1947 to 1954, less than 10 per cent of all total counts of staff actions resulted in split decisions. General Gavin stated that, although internal JCS disagreements over procedural issues usually resulted in a 2-1 vote, unified agreement was generally reported out in order that the decision remained a military one and, therefore, retained greater weight.⁷

⁶Thomas M. Scanlon, Political Influence and National Security (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1950), p. 46.

⁷James E. Thompson, "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," op. cit., p. 127.

⁸Thomas M. Scanlon, War and Peace in the Twentieth Century (New

Thus far, the discussion has primarily pertained to means of influencing the course of national policy in a more or less positive manner. Aside from the bargaining stage, there is little legitimate action open to the military leader who wishes to oppose actively the Administration's national security policy. In fact, the dramatic gesture, resignation, is about the only effective means at the military's disposal. The choice of resignation in itself cannot influence policy; however, resignation in protest assures press coverage and a chance to reopen debate. Also, the retired officer may further his protest and opposition through books, articles, and speeches which may influence future policy. While many well-known military leaders have chosen this course rather than submitting to the Administration's policy, few have been as successful as General Taylor who was to be returned to active duty as Chairman of the Joint Chiefs to initiate the policy for which he fought while Army Chief of Staff.

Quasi-Legitimate Means of Influence

Military efforts to influence policy which are neither clearly legitimate nor illegitimate fall within this area. They include the shades of gray which ultimately resolve themselves as right or wrong simply on the basis of

Thus far, the discussion has primarily centered on
 means of influencing the course of national policy in a
 more or less positive manner. Aside from the foregoing
 steps, there is little legislative action open to the mili-
 tary leader who wishes to oppose actively the administra-
 tion's national security policy. In fact, the realistic
 military responsibility is about the only effective means at
 the military's disposal. The choice of resignation in in-
 self cannot influence policy; however, resignation in pro-
 test assumes great courage and a chance to reopen debate.
 Also, the military officer may further his protest and ap-
 plication through letters, articles, and speeches which may
 influence future policy. While many self-styled military
 leaders have chosen this course rather than submitting to
 the administration's policy, few have been as successful as
 General Taylor who was so renowned for active duty as
 Chairman of the Joint Chiefs to initiate the policy for
 which he fought while Army Chief of Staff.

United States Means of Influence

Military efforts to influence policy which are
 neither clearly legislative nor legislative fall within
 this area. They include the shades of gray which militarily
 resolve themselves as right or wrong simply on the basis of

results. The primary means of influence which most often fall under this category are personal contact, the fait accompli, Congressional lobbying, and propaganda.

The trusted adviser plays a significant role in the national security policy process. The man who has the President's ear is neither restricted by the compromising capability of the National Security Council nor other policy coordination process nor politically nor legally responsible for his advice. In the case of military personal contact, the vertical security hierarchy is clearly circumvented and the adviser may function without a full knowledge of all strategic and political factors involved. There are clear indications that much of the Eisenhower Administration's basic military strategy was formed on the advice of Admiral Arthur W. Radford when the latter was Commander-in-Chief, Pacific, and met with the incoming President aboard the cruiser Helena.⁹

Another case of the personal contact was exemplified by the nuclear submarine controversy and the relationship of Captain, and later Admiral, Rickover with Congress. In this instance, Rickover, although opposed by the Navy leadership and the Administration, successfully engineered

⁹Robert J. Donovan, Eisenhower, The Inside Story (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1956), pp. 17-18.

resolves. The primary means of influence which most often fall under this category are personal contact, the staff, advisors, Congressional lobbying, and propaganda.

The President adviser plays a significant role in the national security policy process. The man who has the President's ear is neither restricted by the compartmentalization of the National Security Council nor other policy coordination process nor politically nor ideologically responsible for his advice. In the case of military personnel contact, the national security hierarchy is clearly delineated and the adviser may function without a full knowledge of all strategic and political factors involved. There are clear indications that even at the Eisenhower Administration's basic military strategy was formed on the advice of General Omar B. Bradley when the latter was Commander-in-Chief, Pacific, and not with the incoming President against the Chinese Mainland.³

Another case of the personal contact was exemplified by the nuclear submarine controversy and the relationship of Kapadia, and later Admiral Pickover with Congress. In this instance, Pickover, although opposed by the Navy leadership and the Administration, successfully engineered

³Edward J. Donnan, Allegiance: The Inside Story (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1958), pp. 17-18.

a drastic change in military strategy by his personal efforts and Congressional contacts. The uniqueness of the situation was described by Raymond:

In 1948 Rickover managed a coup that put him in a remarkable position to carry the project [nuclear submarines] forward. He was placed in charge of the AEC's nuclear reactors branch. He had two hats--one at the Navy and one at the AEC and could, and did, write letters to himself, answer them immediately and get an "agreement" for the official record.¹⁰

Personal contact is an area of military influence which cannot be regulated closely. The activity is traditionally recognized as political expediency, and it is seldom the adviser who implements the effort for a favored position. Speaking of the phenomenon of expertise, Colonel George A. Lincoln, Professor of Social Science at West Point, stated that "no one has a right to be the 'trusted advisor.'" He further explained that it was a privilege earned by proving that a particular viewpoint merited attention and then the adviser would be sought out by the civilian leadership.¹¹ However, regardless of where the effort of personal contact originates, the fact that the

¹⁰ Jack Raymond, Power at the Pentagon (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1964), p. 230.

¹¹ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Hearing before its Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., June 25, 1964 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964), p. 540. Hereafter referred to as Administration of National Security, Hearing.

a drastic change in military strategy by his personal efforts and congressional contacts. The uniqueness of the situation was described by Raymond:

In 1945 Rieker managed a move that put him in a remarkable position to carry the project forward. He was placed in charge of the Army's nuclear reactor branch. He had two assistants at the Navy and one at the War and Navy, and this, with factors to himself, gave him considerable influence for the official record.¹⁰

Personal contact is an area of military influence which cannot be regulated classically. The activity is traditionally recognized as political expediency, and it is seldom that advice was implemented the effort for a favored position. Speaking of the phenomenon of expediency, Colonel George A. Latham, Professor of Social Science at West Point, stated that "no one has a right to be the 'straw man'." He further explained that it was a privilege earned by proving that a particular viewpoint merited attention and then the advice would be sought out by the civilian leadership.¹¹ However, regardless of where the effort of personal contact originates, the fact that the

¹⁰ Jack Raymond, Power at the Pentagon (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1965), p. 170.

¹¹ United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security, Hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security Planning and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d Sess., June 12, 1958 (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1958), p. 122. Raymond referred to an administration of National Security Council.

means are outside the organization charged with being the principal advisers to the President and Secretary of Defense clearly reflects a degree of illegitimacy.

The fait accompli as a means of influencing policy is sometimes unavoidable. This circumstance is reflected in one sense by the action of the policy implementor who has to make a policy decision without recourse to high-level guidance. This situation does not reflect an attempt to influence policy and, therefore, will not be considered. The situation of concern is the area where policy is not clear and personal interpretation is utilized for actions. On several occasions during the Korean War General MacArthur initiated actions which were contrary to Washington's policy in such a way that it had an adverse effect on the nation's diplomatic relations. In such cases as his visit to Formosa and the positioning of American troops near the Yalu, there was little that the Administration could do after the fact but attempt to nullify the effects of his actions.¹²

The fait accompli is not a popular means of exerting military influence because the average military leader does not possess the prestige of a MacArthur. Acts calculated

¹²Richard H. Rovere and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., The General and the President (New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1951), pp. 126-127 and 150-151.

means are outside the organization charged with doing the
 principal business to the President and Secretary of Defense
 clearly reflects a degree of illegitimacy.

The fait accompli as a means of influencing policy
 is sometimes unavoidable. This circumstance is reflected
 in one sense by the action of the policy implementer who
 has to make a policy decision without recourse to high-
 level guidance. This situation does not reflect an attempt
 to influence policy and, therefore, will not be considered.
 The situation of concern is the area where policy is not
 clear and personal interpretation is utilized for action.
 On several occasions during the Korean War General MacArthur
 initiated actions which were contrary to Washington's
 policy in such a way that it had an adverse effect on the
 nation's diplomatic relations. In such cases as his visit
 to London and the positioning of American troops near the
 Yalu, there was little that the Administration could do
 after the fact but attempt to nullify the effects of his
 actions.¹²

The fait accompli is not a popular means of exerting
 military influence because the average military leader does
 not possess the prestige of a Washington. As the calculation

¹² Richard W. Rovere and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr.,
The General and the President (New York: Farrar, Straus
 and Young, 1957), pp. 116-117 and 120-121.

to influence policy adversely are sufficient reason for immediate dismissal. However, acts which gain a favorable public reaction or which find support within the Administration seldom hurt the professional position of the officer who commits it.

The area of propaganda encompasses many acts of legitimacy, quasi-legitimacy and illegitimacy. The various shades of public relations and information activities make analysis extremely difficult. The legitimacy of building a public image receptive to recruitment of a high caliber officer corps cannot be denied. But the extent of the same activities become suspect if the goal is to oppose the Administration's policy. Propaganda, in the latter sense, was more prevalent and less subtle during the unification conflict. However, it still exists in the form of news leaks and the more frequently utilized public information programs of the various services. Requests for speakers can always turn up ranking officers willing to speak on "Sea Power," "Air Power," or the "role of the foot soldier." Newspaper interviews can also be slanted or biased toward certain policies without overtly opposing existing policy. Concerted efforts in the propaganda area frequently call for policy debates either in Congress or the Administration.

be influence policy adversely are sufficient reason for
 resistance themselves. However, acts which gain a favorable
 public reaction on which find support within the Administra-
 tion seldom hurt the professional position of the officer
 who commits it.

The area of propaganda and news is very vast of
 industry, quasi-judicial and illegality. The various
 shades of public relations and information activities have
 analysis extremely difficult. The tendency of public
 public image receptive to recruitment of a high caliber
 officer corps cannot be denied. But the extent of the same
 activities become suspect if the goal is to oppose the ad-
 ministrative's policy. Propaganda, in the latter sense,
 was more prevalent and less subtle during the unification
 conflict. However, it still exists in the form of news
 leaks and the more frequently utilized public information
 programs of the various agencies. Requests for speakers
 can always be made by ranking officers willing to speak on
 "Air Power," "Air Power," or the role of the Air Officer.
 Newspaper interviews can also be arranged on almost any
 certain policies without overtly opposing existing policy.
 Concepts of the propaganda area frequently call
 for policy debates either in Congress or the Administration.

Illegitimate Means of Influence

Illegitimate military efforts to influence national policy include active and official opposition to formulated policies, indirect political pressure, and the use of unethical practices to obtain military goals. In most cases, these practices are enjoined only when other avenues of policy influence are closed. The result of flagrant utilization of illegitimate means inevitably places the military under attack by arousing public opinion or the Administration's ire.

Direct opposition to formulated policy places the military in or on the fringes of the political arena. General MacArthur opposed the Truman Administration's policy in Korea by criticism in press releases and statements which he allowed to be used by Congressmen and private organizations.¹³ While the General's political ambitions have been cited as part of the reason that he chose to oppose vocally the Administration, there is every reason to believe that he simply placed himself above the system and that his political aspirations were only a secondary motivation for his actions.

¹³Rovere, op. cit., pp. 152-153; and Varin E. Whan, Jr. (ed.), A Soldier Speaks, Public Papers and Speeches of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publishers, 1965), pp. 233-234.

Illegitimate Means of Influence

Illegitimate military efforts to influence national policy include such as official opposition to formulated policies, indirect political pressure, and the use of technical resources to obtain military goals. In most cases, these practices are justified only when other avenues of policy influence are closed. The result of blatant violation of illegitimate means is usually placed in the military arena by growing public opinion or the administration's fear.

Direct opposition to formulated policy places the military in an on the fringe of the political arena. General MacArthur opposed the Truman Administration's policy in Korea by criticism in press releases and statements which he refused to be used by Congressmen and parliamentarians.¹¹ While the General's political actions have been cited as part of the reason that his efforts to oppose vocally the Administration, there is every reason to believe that he simply placed himself above the system and that his political aspirations were only a secondary motivation for his actions.

¹¹ MacArthur, op. cit., pp. 111-112; and various other sources. A similar example, public papers and speeches of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publishers, 1961), pp. 213-214.

Other examples of direct opposition generally utilized the means of the news leak or direct liaison with Congressmen who shared their opposition. Kaufmann noted the fact that "military leaders had a disconcerting habit of allowing Congress to learn that particular decisions had been made over their opposition or without their support."¹⁴ Other observers have noted the same phenomenon and military testimony before Congressional Committees generally bear out their observations.

Indirect political pressure is the underlying theme of those who fear an industrial-military clique. Part of this concern is undoubtedly based on the fact that military and industrial contractors have a similar interest in large defense budgets. The military leadership certainly desires to procure the best capabilities to meet any contingency, and the profits of the defense industry depend upon the fat contracts for weapons and systems which unrestricted spending generates. There can be little doubt that, at times, the pressures for certain weapon systems have appeared to be coordinated between industry and the military. In such cases, Congressmen known to be friendly to particular defense contractors have pushed specific procurement at the

¹⁴ William W. Kaufmann, The McNamara Strategy (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1964), pp. 19-20.

Other examples of direct opposition generally utilized the means of the news leak or direct liaison with Congressmen who shared their opposition. Hantman noted the fact that military leaders had a disconcerting habit of allowing Congress to learn their particular decisions had been made even after opposition or without their support.¹⁴ Other observers have noted the same phenomenon and military testimony before Congressional Committees generally bore out their observations. Underlying political pressure is the underlying theme of those who fear an industrial-military clique. Part of this concern is undoubtedly based on the fact that military and industrial contractors have a similar interest in large defense budgets. The military leadership certainly desires to procure the best capabilities to meet any contingency, and the profits of the defense industry depend upon the far contracts for weapons and systems which unrestricted spending generates. There can be little doubt that, at times, the pressures for certain weapon systems have appeared to be coordinated between industry and the military. In such cases, Congressmen known to be friendly to particular defense contractors have passed specific procurements or the

¹⁴ William A. Hantman, *The Military-Industrial Complex* (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1964), pp. 12-13.

same time that military leaders have made similar requests through the budgetary process. Thus, the appearance of a new drive by the Air Force for a continuing role for the manned bomber, specifically the AMSA which may be able to support nuclear propulsion, coincides with industry's call for re-examination of the nuclear-powered manned aircraft.¹⁵

Another alleged method of sustaining the military-industrial coalition has been the Pentagon's interest in munition sales. The charge has been made that the sale of munitions by the Pentagon have been maintained at about 1.6 billion dollars annually even though the avowed policy of the Administration is to slow the traffic in arms to under-developed nations which are not faced with an outside threat.¹⁶ The facts in this case have been slanted somewhat to increase readability and interest; however, sufficient military activity in the sale of arms exists to keep the possibility of a military-industrial collusion alive.

Previous discussion has indicated that the military services, collectively and individually, have corporate interests which affect national security policy. Some of the means through which the military pursue their corporate interests were noted in the discussions on the subject in

¹⁵ Article in The Washington Post, February 3, 1967.

¹⁶ Article in The Washington Post, February 20, 1967.

some time these military leaders have made similar proposals through the budgetary process. Thus, the appearance of a new drive by the Air Force for a continuing role for the summer bomber, especially the B-52 which may be able to support nuclear operations, coincides with industry's call for re-examination of gas turbine-powered manned aircraft.¹² Another alleged method of maintaining the military-industrial coalition has been the Pentagon's interest in munition sales. The charge has been made that the sale of munitions by the Pentagon have been maintained at about 1.6 billion dollars annually even though the stated policy of the Administration is to slow the traffic in arms to underdeveloped regions which are not faced with an outside threat.¹³ The facts in this case have been stated somewhat to increase credibility and interest; however, sufficient military activity in the sale of arms exists to keep the possibility of a military-industrial coalition alive. The previous discussion has indicated that the military services, collectively and individually, have corporate interests which affect national security policy. Some of the more examples which the military pursue their corporate interests were noted in the discussion on the subject in

¹² Article in The Washington Post, February 3, 1957.

¹³ Article in The Washington Post, February 20, 1957.

Chapters II and III. Generally, the overt efforts of the military in this area pertain to items such as pay, retirement, medical care, housing, and other group interests similar to those held by labor or business groups. Efforts exerted in these cases run to Congressional lobbying, attempts to align support from business, labor, and veteran groups, and other standard public opinion molding devices. Efforts in these areas have generally been accepted as legitimate because they are traditional political devices of interest groups. However, when similar efforts are expended to affect policy in a more direct manner, the legitimacy of the means are suspect.

Most corporate interest efforts to affect national policy may be traced to Congressional lobbying, inter-service compromise, interservice conflict, and compromise between the Administration and the military leadership. The legitimate and quasi-legitimate aspects of these various situations have already been discussed. Illegitimate means employed by the various services were apparent in the coverage of the unification conflict. Therefore, only the cloudy issues involving lobbying and vertical compromise will be noted.

The military's relationship with Congress is a necessary part of the security policy process so long as the intercourse remains within proper limits. The military

Chapters II and III. Generally, the most effective of the military in this area tends to be those such as the military, medical care, housing, and other group interests similar to those noted by the military groups. Efforts in these areas are on Congressional lobbying, attempts to align support from business, labor, and various groups, and other standard public opinion molding devices. Efforts in these areas have generally been accepted as legitimate because they are traditional political devices of interest groups. However, when similar efforts are attempted to affect policy in a more direct manner, the legitimacy of the means are suspect.

How corporate interests efforts to affect national policy may be traced to Congressional lobbying, industry compromise, intervention conflict, and compromise between the administration and the military leadership. The legitimate and quasi-legitimate aspects of these various situations have already been discussed. Illegitimate means employed by the various services were apparent in the coverage of the mobilization conflict. Therefore, only the study issues involving lobbying and vertical compromise will be noted.

The military's relationship with Congress is a necessary part of the security policy process as long as the government remains within proper limits. The military

must brief Congress on capabilities and limitation of United States and foreign military power. Yet, many of the efforts exerted by the military are designed to win "friends" and supporters for the individual service's policies. Since Congress must remain unbiased and authorize appropriations for the total military effort, unduly biased "friends" do not benefit national security. Thus, the means involved in gaining general support for a service's policies must be considered illegitimate.

Some of the means which are employed in illegitimate lobbying include use of public funds and material to influence Congressmen favorably, collusion between committee members and military witnesses during hearings, and providing Congressmen with materials to oppose the Administration's policy. Military pampering of Congressmen is a traditional and unfortunately necessary device of lobbying. An anonymous Military Legislative Officer described its effectiveness as follows:

I don't care how obstreperous a Congressman is toward a certain piece of legislation. If I once get him on a junket, I figure the odds have begun to shift in our favor. Our lobbying effectiveness is at its height, not here on Capitol Hill, but in the field, where we get the Congressman to "see for themselves."¹⁷

¹⁷Raymond, op. cit., p. 189.

and that Congress on capitalistic and industrial is
 having power and foreign military power. Yet, many of the
 efforts mounted by the military are assigned to the "friends"
 and supporters for the individual service's policies. Since
 Congress must remain unified and maintain its position
 for the total military effort, today's military is
 not really national security. Thus, the same interests in
 related general support for a service's policies must be
 considered illegitimate.

One of the means which are employed in illegitimate
 policy making use of public funds and material to influ-
 ence Congressmen favorably; collusion between Congressmen
 and military witnesses during hearings, and provide-
 ing Congressmen with materials to oppose the Administra-
 tion's policy. Military backing of Congressmen is a pro-
 tected and unfortunately necessary device of today's
 An anonymous military legislative official described the
 effectiveness as follows:

I don't care how often a Congressman is
 toward a certain piece of legislation. If I once get
 him on a "hook", I figure one can have him to
 shift in my favor. Our lobbying effectiveness is
 as for today, not even on Capitol Hill, but in the
 field where we get the Congressman to see for
 ourselves.

There are certainly enough Congressmen who can be classified as "Navy," "Army," or "Air Force" to bear out the effectiveness of military lobbying. In fact, one might even make the observation that military efforts to gain "friends" in Congress have been so successful that members of the important Armed Services Committees nearly divide among the three services. Therefore, no particular service has gained a predominant position, but the military voice has been assured a hearing.

Previous mention was made of vertical bargaining as a legitimate means of exerting military influence. However, the legitimacy of the process becomes suspect when the bargaining position is used to pursue corporate interest at the expense of national security. This aspect of vertical bargaining is difficult to substantiate; however, it would appear that, at times, the need for military support has caused the Administration to change its stance toward a particular service's policy. In at least one case, the so-called "revolt of the admirals," the military means was coercion in its less subtle form. Other evidence indicates that even in the age of McNamara control a certain amount of coercion still exists. The basis for such an observation rests on the inconsistency of the McNamara approach, Programmed Forces or Systems Analysis, and the budgets of the various forces over the four-year period 1961-1965. In the

There are certainly enough Congressmen who can be classified as "navy," "army," or "air force," to base on the effectiveness of military lobbying. In fact, one might even make the observation that military efforts to gain "friends" in Congress have been as successful as most efforts of the important armed services Committees nearly divide among the three services. Therefore, no particular service has gained a preeminent position, but the military voice has been assured a hearing.

Previous mention was made of vertical paralogies as a systematic means of exerting military influence. However, the ineffectiveness of the process becomes suspect when the vertical position is used as a means of influence. In fact, the aspect of vertical paralogies is difficult to substantiate; however, it would appear that, at times, the need for military support has caused the Administration to change its stance toward a particular service's policy. In at least one case, the so-called "revolt of the admirals," the military means was coercion in its least subtle form. Other evidence indicates that even in the age of Kennedy control is certain amount of coercion still exists. The basis for such an observation rests on the inconsistency of the Kennedy approach, the planned forces or systems analysis, and the budgets of the various forces over the four-year period 1961-1965. In the

McNamara approach to the military budget, the amounts derived for the individual services depend upon their requirements to carry out functions in a balanced strategic system.¹⁸ However, even with changes in strategic concepts which would tend to disrupt the relative proportion of the overall budget division, the relative amounts of defense funds being awarded each service has remained almost static, with less than 2 per cent differences occurring over the 1961-1965 time period.¹⁹

Before categorizing military means of influence, care was taken to qualify that legitimacy or illegitimacy did not imply right or wrong. The means utilized by the military are, in the long run, judged on the basis of results evaluated in the light of history. This fact can be attested by the cases of military men who have been severely disciplined for utilizing illegitimate means to influence policy only to have future generations exonerate their actions. The court martial of Billy Mitchell is one of the more famous cases which illustrates that legitimacy and perceptiveness are not always synonymous.

¹⁸ Charles J. Hitch, "Planning-Programming-Budgeting System," American Defense Policy, op. cit., pp. 212-215.

¹⁹ United States Department of Defense, Statement of Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara Before the House Armed Services Committee on Fiscal Year 1965-69 Defense Program and the 1965 Budget, January 27, 1964, p. 162. (Mimeographed.)

notable approach to the military budget, the amount de-
 rived for the individual services depends upon their relative
 merits to carry out functions in a balanced strategic
 system.¹⁸ However, even with changes in strategic concepts
 which would tend to disrupt the relative proportion of the
 overall budget division, the relative amounts of service
 funds being awarded each service has remained almost static,
 with less than 5 per cent differences occurring over the
 1941-1965 time period.¹⁹

Before considering military means of influence,
 care has been taken to qualify that legitimacy of illegitimacy
 did not imply right or wrong. The means utilized by the
 military are, in the long run, judged on the basis of
 results evaluated in the light of history. This fact can-
 not be disputed by the critics of military men who have been
 severely disciplined for utilizing illegitimate means to
 influence policy only to have future generations condemn
 their actions. The court martial of Billy Mitchell is one
 of the more famous cases which illustrates that legitimacy
 and perversiveness are not always synonymous.

¹⁸ Charles J. Hitch, "Planning-Programming-Budgeting
 System," American Defense Journal, pp. 112-113.
¹⁹ United States Department of Defense, Departmental
 Secretary of Defense Report: Departmental Review of the
 Armed Services Committee on Fiscal Year 1965-66
Report and the 1965 Budget, January 27, 1965, p. 145.
 (Reimprinted.)

Another qualification should be that the utilization of other than legitimate means to exert influence may be in reaction to political controls beyond those explicitly or implicitly imposed by law or tradition. In this category must be placed the use of military prestige to legitimate the Administration's policy. This aspect of military influence is particularly significant when the deliberate impression is projected that the policy in question has been evaluated on the basis of military expertise with resulting approval. General Gavin thought that using the military to legitimate policy was "fraught with dangers" and indicated that the practice was not rare during his service as Army Chief of Staff.²⁰ Other writers, both military and civilian, have commented on the problem without offering a practical solution within the existing system.

Another factor which has reaction probabilities is the emergence of the Department of Defense as a rival or competitor of the military departments in most areas of military policy. This development takes on special significance in the era of decision making on the basis of cost effectiveness. In order to justify their positions and capability requests, the services must present studies in support of their existing policies or policy proposals.

²⁰Gavin, op. cit., p. 168.

Another question should be that the utilization of other than legislative means to exert influence may be in certain so political controls beyond those explicitly or implicitly imposed by law or tradition. In this category must be placed the use of military pressure to legislate the administration's policy. This aspect of military influence is particularly significant when the deliberate intent is projected that the policy in question has been evaluated on the basis of military expertise with resulting approval. General Jervis thought that using the military to legislate policy was "troubled with dangers" and indicated that the practice was not even during his service as Army Chief of Staff.¹⁰ Other writers, both military and civilian, have commented on the problem without offering a practical solution within the existing system.

Another factor which has received considerable attention is the importance of the Department of Defense as a rival or competitor of the military departments in most areas of military policy. This development takes on special significance in the use of decision making on the basis of our effectiveness. In order to justify their position and capability to request the services must present studies in support of their existing policies or policy proposals.

Yet, the parameters and assumptions are imposed or limited by the Department of Defense; therefore, the results of the study may be manipulated at the outset. Another means used by the Department of Defense to control legitimate military influence is to reject undesired study results as incomplete or inconclusive and order that the problem be re-studied. The study process is necessarily time consuming and the order to re-evaluate effectively postpones any supported request until the following year's budget.

The Department of Defense has its own publicity machinery and links with Congress. The Office of the Secretary of Defense can officially mute military criticism and also combat some of the less subtle acts of policy opposition. Because of the increased control exercised by the present Secretary, military influence has decreased except in those areas where their policy positions are strongly supported by other institutions in government--Department of State, Congress, or the Administration itself.

II. AN APPROPRIATE MILITARY ROLE

Once military participation per se is accepted as necessary to more effective policy-making, it would then seem to become a question of establishing appropriate limits and conditions for it, in terms of those values or criteria that seem to have general acceptance in society.²¹

²¹Burton Sapin et al., An Appropriate Role for the

For, the parameters and assumptions are imposed on limited by the Department of Defense; therefore, the results of the study may be manipulated at the outset. Another reason used by the Department of Defense to control legislative military influence is to reject undesired study results as inconclusive or inconclusive and order that the problem be re-studied. The study process is necessarily time consuming and the order to re-study effectively postpones any supporting request until the following year's budget. The Department of Defense has its own publicity machinery and links with Congress. The office of the Secretary of Defense can officially voice military criticism and also conduct some of the less subtle acts of policy opposition. Because of the increased control exercised by the President's Secretary, military influence has decreased except in those areas where their policy positions are strongly supported by other institutions in government--Department of State, Congress, or the Administration itself.

II. AN APPROPRIATE MILITARY ROLE

Does military participation per se is necessary as necessary to have effective policy-making, it would then seem to become a question of establishing appropriate limits and conditions for it, in terms of those values or criteria that seem to have general acceptance in society.¹¹

¹¹ Gordon Kaufman et al., An Appropriate Role for the

Although the preceding statement was directed toward the military's role in foreign policy, it is equally applicable to the broader scope of national security policy. But, the task of determining an appropriate military role is extremely complex. The difficulties involved in discovering overall limitations are both numerous and interdependent. Because of the intricacies involved, role determination has generally been attempted on the basis of micro-analysis. Thus, Congress concerns itself with structuring a security organization, and scholars study the military's influence in foreign policy, economic policy, political activities, or a score of others pertinent to military influence.

The micro-analysis approach appears to have serious deficiencies. While such studies seem to strive for objectivity and reliability, the results lose much of their validity or even become meaningless when considering the problem as a whole. This failure of micro-analysis is probably caused by the loss of inter-relationships and conflicting objectives which can be easily experienced when dealing with the apparent significance of any given facet of the military role. Thus, one study criticizes the Joint

Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note (Princeton University, Organizational Behavioral Section, July, 1954), p. 9.

Although the preceding statement was directed toward the military's role in foreign policy, it is equally applicable to the broader scope of national security policy. The role of the military in domestic security is also extremely complex. The military is involved in domestic security in a number of ways, both internal and external. Because of the intricacies involved, role determination has generally been attempted on the basis of micro-analysis. Thus, Congress concerns itself with securing a security organization, and scholars study the military's influence in foreign policy, economic policy, political activities, or a number of other problems to military influence. The micro-analysis approach appears to have serious deficiencies. While such studies seem to serve the objectivity and reliability, the results have much of their validity or even become meaningless when considering the problem as a whole. This failure of micro-analysis is probably caused by the loss of inter-relationships and overlooking objectives which can be easily repeated when dealing with the significant significance of any given topic of the military role. Thus, the study criticized the joint

Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research
from Princeton University, Organizational Behavior
Section, July, 1964, p. 2.

Chiefs because they have tended to be insulated from civilian control because of organizational structure and intellectual inability to take successful issue with their judgments.²² On the same subject, another authoritative source finds that the Joint Chiefs must inevitably be more influenced by the attitudes and behavior of the policy-makers and statesmen than by any other source.²³ Numerous other examples of diverse conclusions exist on the same, or similar, phenomenon approached from a different facet of the military role.

The implications of national security policy demand that all participants in the policy process function effectively and efficiently. The scope of participants' influence can only be limited legitimately by the criteria of democracy and societal values. Therefore, in the determination of an appropriate military role, the overall effect of military influence should be considered rather than attacking the problem in a piece-meal fashion. This does not mean that specific areas should not be studied; however, proposed limitations and role determinations must be

²²Burton M. Sapin and Richard C. Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954), p. 29.

²³Samuel P. Huntington, The Soldier and the State (Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1957), pp. 375-376.

Chiefs because they have tended to be insulated from civil-
ian control because of organizational resources and tradi-
tional inability to take controversial issues with their
judgments.²¹ On the same subject, another authoritative
source finds that the Joint Chiefs were inevitably be more
influenced by the attitudes and behavior of the policy-
makers and administration than by any other source.²² Numerous
other examples of diverse considerations exist on the same, or
similar, phenomenon approached from a different facet of
the military role.

The implications of national security policy require
that all participants in the policy process function effec-
tively and efficiently. The scope of participants' influ-
ence can only be limited legislatively by the criteria of
democracy and technical values. Therefore, in the determina-
tion of an appropriate military role, the overall effect of
military influence should be considered rather than attach-
ing the problem in a piecemeal fashion. This does not
mean that specific areas should not be studied; however,
proposed limitations and role determinations must be

²¹ Arthur H. Shapiro and Richard C. Snyder, *The Role of
the Military in American Foreign Policy* (New York: New
York: Doubleday and Company, 1964), p. 19.

²² Samuel H. Huntington, *The Soldier and the State*
(Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press,
1957), pp. 272-273.

constantly applied to the overall goals of national security and democracy. And, because these goals are not always compatible, some degree of compromise must sometimes be considered necessary.

Problems of a Limiting Parameter

The derivation of an appropriate military role involves the proper balancing of variables within the overall framework of the national security process. Determination of limitations must consider the interdependency of politico-military matters, civilian-military expertise, definitive range of military responsibilities, and the dangers of either submissiveness or arrogance. The inherent conflict of role reactions among policy participants can only be corrected by recognizing and lessening the causes of competition and hostility.

As mentioned in Chapter II, distrust, antagonism, and irritation between civilian and military groups are detrimental to the effectiveness and efficiency of policy-making. There was a time that these adverse factors were relatively unimportant to national security. However, the interdependency of political and military matters now dictate that the two groups work together in harmony and mutual respect. As Huntington points out:

The ordering of its civil military relations . . . is basic to a nation's military security policy.

essentially applied to the overall goals of national security and democracy. And, because these goals are not always compatible, some degree of compromise must sometimes be considered necessary.

Problems of a Limited Partnership

The decision of an appropriate military role involves the proper balancing of variables within the overall framework of the national security process. Determination of limitations must consider the interdependency of political, military, economic, civilian-military relations, the range of military responsibilities, and the degree of either subservience or supremacy. The inherent conflict of role reactions among policy participants can only be corrected by recognizing and lessening the causes of competition and hostility.

As mentioned in Chapter II, distrust, antagonism, and friction between civilian and military groups are detrimental to the effectiveness and efficiency of policy-making. There was a time that these adverse factors were relatively unimportant to national security. However, the interdependency of political and military matters now requires that the two groups work together in harmony and mutual respect, as Washington points out:

The ordering of its civil-military relations is a key to a nation's military security policy.

The objective of this policy on the institutional level is to develop a system of civil-military relations which will maximize military security at the least sacrifice of other social values. The achievement of this objective involves a complex balancing of power and attitudes among civilian and military groups. Nations which develop a properly balanced pattern of civil-military relations have a great advantage in the search for security. They increase their likelihood of reaching right answers to the operating issues of military policy. Nations which fail to develop a balanced pattern of civil-military relations squander their resources and run uncalculated risks.²⁴

The institutionalizing of a national security hierarchy by the "National Security Act of 1947" and amendments to the Act was an attempt to "order" the nation's civil-military relations properly. Although successful to some degree, efforts to solve the problems of military-political interdependency solely through legislative organization is bound to fall short in some respects. While effective hierarchal structure may be formulated, legislation cannot provide the staffing nor the will to make the organization function as planned. Additionally, all aspects of national security policy have not centralized in the organs envisioned by Congressional efforts. While Congress structured a hierarchy, other government agencies were evolving and creating lateral dispersion of influence and responsibility. Huntington noted this aspect of the security policy process when he pointed out that members of the Executive Office

²⁴Ibid., p. 2.

The objective of this policy on the institutional level is to develop a system of civil-military relations which will maximize military security at the least sacrifice of other social values. The achievement of this objective involves a complex balancing of power and attitudes among civilian and military groups. Nations which develop a properly balanced pattern of civil-military relations have a great advantage in the search for security. They increase their likelihood of reaching right answers to the operating issues of military policy. Nations which fail to develop a balanced pattern of civil-military relations squander their resources and run unnecessary risks.

The institutionalization of a national security hierarchy by the "National Security Act of 1947" and amendments to the Act was an attempt to "order" the nation's civil-military relations properly. Although successful to some degree, efforts to solve the problem of military-political interdependency solely through legislative organization is bound to fall short in some respects. While effective hierarchical structure may be formulated, legislation cannot provide the staffing nor the will to make the organization function as planned. Additionally, all aspects of national security policy have not been centralized in the organs envisioned by Congressional action. While Congress structured a hierarchy, other government agencies were evolving and creating lateral dispersion of influence and responsibility. Underlying much of this aspect of the security policy process when the present act was enacted at the Executive Office

have responsibilities which disrupt or supplement those of the Defense and State Departments.²⁵ Stanley perceived the importance of the Treasury and Commerce Departments in policy making and coordination, and also recognized the significance of the Office of Defense Mobilization, various coordinating committees and the Committee on Government Organization.²⁶ Any list of governmental bodies which increase the conflict potential in civil-military relations should include Congress, especially the Appropriations, Armed Services, and Foreign Policy Committees.

The range of interested parties in the policy-making process suggests that limitations on a single participant's role will invariably strengthen the influence of another sector. Therefore, one of the major problems which must be considered when limiting the military's influence is the determination if another agency can more effectively perform the function. Also, assuming that proper limitations can be determined for the military participation in the policy process, attention must be directed toward protecting those functions left to the military. Otherwise more powerful elements in the process will further erode military influence in their own search for a broader role.

²⁵Ibid., p. 18.

²⁶Stanley, op. cit., p. 16.

have responsibilities which stretch or encompass those of the Defense and State Departments.¹⁵ Policy involves the importance of the Treasury and Commerce Departments in policy making and coordination, and also recognizes the significance of the Office of Defense Mobilization, various coordinating committees and the Committee on Government Organization.¹⁶ Any list of governmental bodies which increase the conflict potential in civil-military relations should include Congress, especially the Appropriations, Armed Services, and Foreign Policy Committees.

The range of interested parties in the policy-making process suggests that limitations on a single participant's role will inevitably strengthen the influence of another sector. Therefore, one of the major problems which must be considered when limiting the military's influence is the decentralization of another agency can more effectively perform the function. Also, assuming that proper limitations can be determined for the military participation in the policy process, attention must be directed toward protecting those functions left to the military. Otherwise more powerful elements in the process will further erode military influence in their own search for a broader role.

¹⁵ Ibid., p. 16.

¹⁶ Ibid., pp. 16, 17.

Even if clear-cut and binding limitations are successfully placed on military influence, the problem of coordination and limitation will still exist. That part of the problem which rests on personal attitudes--mutual distrust and lack of respect--can be alleviated by more intensive efforts at cross education. The exchange program of officers between State and Defense apparently has had success in this area although limited by numbers.²⁷ However, if this and other programs, such as the civilian enrollment at service colleges, are expanded sufficiently to be widely effective, the problem of the "military mind" may take on a more significant relevance than it presently possesses. Such a situation could downgrade the validity of military advice and recommendation more radically than structural limitations on influence.

Improvement in the civilian leadership's understanding of military matters is one of the foremost requirements of strengthening the concept of civilian supremacy as well as contributing more effectively to the security of the nation. Yet, an apparent solution, such as the requirement that the Deputy Secretary of Defense or the Assistant Secretaries of Defense be career civil servants rather than political appointees, loses much of its validity when

²⁷ Administration of National Security, Hearing, op. cit., pp. 597-600.

Even if clear-cut and binding limitations are essentially placed on military influence, the problem of coordination and limitation will still exist. The fear of the problem which rests on personal attitudes--mutual distrust and lack of interest--can be alleviated by more intensive efforts at cross education. The exchange program of officers between State and Defense agencies has had some success in this area although limited by numbers.⁵⁷ However, is this and other programs, such as the civilian enrollment in service colleges, are expanded sufficiently to be widely effective, the problem of the military mind may take on a more significant relevance than it presently possesses. Even a situation could develop where the validity of military advice and recommendations were radically questioned by limitations on influence. Improvement in the civilian leadership's understanding of military matters is one of the foremost responsibilities of strengthening the concept of civilian supremacy as well as contributing more effectively to the security of the nation. Yet, an apparent solution, such as the requirement that the Deputy Secretary of Defense or the Assistant Secretary of Defense be career civil servants rather than political appointees, faces much of the validity when

57 Administration of National Security, Westing, op. cit., pp. 297-300.

approached in the overall search for effective national policy making. While the proposal solves the problems of expertise and continuity at the lower level, the arrangement would be counter to the tradition of political responsibility for policy makers as well as limiting the power of the Secretary of Defense.

Another problem area which must be evaluated when limiting the military role involves the clarification of military responsibilities. This area is filled with latent possibilities and dangers. Can the decision be made that military responsibility stops when superiors in the hierarchy have been informed or advised? In an era of extreme military-political interdependency, can the military responsibility be relegated to pure capability analysis? Where is the line to be drawn which separates military responsibility from political responsibility? And a dozen other equally pertinent questions must be evaluated in the overall context of national security requirements rather than the more narrow confines of civilian supremacy, legitimacy, expertise, etc.

One important factor in clarifying military responsibility is the firmness and clarity of the national policy provided the military leadership. Kintner criticizes national policy on the ground that it provides inadequate guidelines due to its broadness and general character. He

approached in the overall search for effective national policy making. While the proposal solves the problem of expertise and continuity at the lower level, the arrangement would be counter to the tradition of political responsibility for policy making as well as limiting the power of the Secretary of Defense.

The proposed program area which would be organized around limiting the military role involves the elimination of military responsibilities. This idea is linked with issues of position and danger. On the decision to make such military responsibilities, some who support in the area of security have been taken on board. In fact, on extreme military-political responsibility, can the military responsibility be rejected to some capability analysis. It is the idea to be drawn which separates military responsibility from political responsibility and a lower level. Equally, certain decisions must be evaluated in the context of all context of national security requirements rather than the more narrow context of civilian government, industry, education, etc.

One important factor in identifying military responsibility is the firmness and clarity of the national policy provided the military leadership. Another criterion is national policy on the ground that it provides leadership and guidance to the Department and general character.

finds that such policy gives little direction for military planning and operation in the total scheme.²⁸ The argument is valid from the viewpoint of clarifying military responsibility, but the articulation of concrete and detailed national goals and policies lends a dogmatic inflexibility to national strategy.

Another situation which must be considered is the degree of responsibility which the military must assume for the Administration's policy. This area is the center of controversy over utilizing the military to legitimate policy which they oppose and the means used by the military to make their opposition known. That civilian leadership cannot abide public opposition from military subordinates is the most effective argument for a broad military responsibility to support Administration policies. In the narrow context of clarifying responsibilities, this concept is unassailable; however, public opposition has frequently resulted in policy alterations which improve the overall national security posture. "Muzzling" of military opinion and denial of other means of military influence might also lead to the type of military professionalism which thrives on indecisiveness and political intrigue.

²⁸ William R. Kintner, "The Politicization of Strategy," National Security, ed. David M. Abshire (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1963), p. 395.

tion that such policy gives little direction for military planning and operation in the total scheme.²⁸ The argument is valid from the viewpoint of identifying military responsibility, but the articulation of concrete and detailed national goals and policies leaves a complete indefiniteness in national strategy.

Another answer which must be considered is the degree of responsibility which the military must assume for the administration's policy. This case is the center of controversy over defining the military as legislative policy which they oppose and the same case is the military's own. Their opposition comes. That civilian leadership can and must provide leadership from military subordinates is not an effective argument for a broad military responsibility to support administration policies. In the narrow context of clarified responsibilities, this concept is unacceptable; however, public opinion has repeatedly called for policy decisions which improve the overall national security posture. Availability of military opinion and that of other areas of military influence might also lead to the type of advisory professional advice which on effectiveness and political influence.

²⁸William H. Roberts, "The Political Function of the Military," *National Security*, ed. David M. Roberts (New York: Frederick A. Praeger Publishers, 1963), p. 192.

Too much emphasis on civilian supremacy and an exacting national security hierarchy may also permeate the military establishment with an attitude of submissiveness. This "danger" would affect the direction of national security policy because of its effect on military capability. Efforts of the various service leaders to maintain military readiness for implementation of national policies as well as war contingencies comprise a vast majority of the conflicts between the military and civilian leadership. Much of the controversy over role limitation has been based on a need to lessen debate and conflict within the national policy process. Unification has been the plan most often advanced because complete integration would provide unitary control and better discipline of a smaller military leadership. Yet, even the strongest advocates of civilian control have seen some disadvantages in this course of action. In addition to the ever present possibility that true unification might create greater rather than less military influence and participation in national policy, many recognize the divergent interests of the three services as a source of new ideas and a sounding board for ideas among the services.

While the clamor is occasionally raised for an increase in discipline to control military influence and means of influence, there is a danger that too much

Too much emphasis on civilian supremacy, and an increasing national security hierarchy, may also prevent the military establishment from an attitude of submission. This "danger" would affect the discussion of national security policy because of the effect on military capability. Efforts of the various service leaders to maintain military traditions for implementation of national policies as well as war contingencies comprise a vast majority of the conflict between the military and civilian leadership. Much of the controversy over role limitation has been based on a need to lessen debate and conflict within the national policy process. Indication has been the plan to offer advanced because complete information would provide military control and better discipline of a smaller military leader. Yet, even the strongest advocates of civilian control have seen some disadvantages in this course of action. In addition to the ever present possibility that some limitation might create greater rather than less military influence and participation in national policy, many worry that the divergent interests of the three services as a source of new ideas and a sounding board for these ideas the services.

While the claim is occasionally raised for an increase in discipline to control military influence and

claim of efficiency, there is a danger that too much

discipline may encourage the "yes man" hazard. If Huntington's observation that "rigid and inflexible obedience may well stifle new ideas and become slave to an unprogressive routine," is generally applicable to military service, the danger of unification may well be the gradual degradation of military strength and loss of policy flexibility.²⁹

Of equal importance when considering the role of the military is the danger of the "Man on Horseback." This aspect ties in closely with preservation of the civilian supremacy concept, but differentiation can be made on the basis of degree and method. For instance, the military leadership could gain a preponderance of power without destroying the facade of civilian control. This result could be achieved by providing advice in the form of a single alternative; military control of the civilian leadership; and, creeping militarism as a result of civilian leadership becoming military in spirit and attitude.³⁰ Even though charges are occasionally made that this point has already been reached or that national militarism is imminent, factual evidence to support the allegations refer to isolated cases rather than general conditions. Yet the importance of basic limitations on the military role imposed

²⁹Huntington, The Soldier and the State, op. cit., p. 75.

³⁰Sapin and Snyder, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy, op. cit., pp. 55-56.

discipline may encourage the "yes man" habit. In training-
 don't's observation that "this is a terrible condition" may
 well bring new ideas and become alive to an impressive
 routine," is generally applicable to military service, the
 danger of limitation may well be the gradual degradation
 of military strength and loss of policy flexibility.¹⁸
 Of equal importance when considering the role of the
 military is the danger of too much wariness. This
 aspect lies in closely with preservation of the civilian
 supremacy concept, but differentiation can be made on the
 basis of degree and method. For instance, the military
 leadership could gain a responsiveness of power without
 destroying the fabric of civilian control. This would
 could be achieved by providing advice in the form of a
 single alternative; military counsel to the civilian leader-
 ship and, creating military as a civilian
 leadership becoming military in spirit and attitude.¹⁹
 Even though changes are occasionally made this point
 has already been touched on that national military is
 limited, general advice to support the civilian leader
 in limited cases rather than general commitment. The
 importance of basic limitations on the military role imposed

¹⁸ Huntington, *The Soldier and the State*, pp. 215-16.

¹⁹ *Legis and Policy, The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy*, pp. 215-16.

by democracy, as well as security, demands that all solutions to national security policy problems be evaluated in the light of possible or potential long-run effects as well as obvious short-run implications. The danger of military intervention in political affairs appears extremely unlikely; however, the position of power held by the military leadership at the end of World War II definitely indicates that military intervention would not be an impossible event if radically different circumstances and attitudes should prevail.

Necessary Factors for Limiting Influence

The most significant limitations imposed on military influence have been Congressional efforts to structure the policy process and Executive or statutory provisions restricting legitimate military means of influence. These limitations have not resulted in the harmony, effectiveness, and efficiency initially expected. In fact, the combined efforts of Congress and the Administration have not approached in significance the self-imposed military restrictions founded in tradition and military indoctrination. This is not to imply that Congressional or hierarchal restrictions were not necessary, but rather that these measures were treatments of symptoms instead of causal alleviation.

by democracy, as well as security. Germany has all along been the national security policy problem in the light of possible or potential long-run effects as well as serious short-run implications. The danger of military intervention in political affairs appears extremely unlikely; however, the position of power held by the military leadership at the end of World War II seriously indicates that military intervention would not be an impossible event. It is clearly different circumstances and attitudes should prevail.

Necessary Factors for Limiting Influence

The most significant limitations imposed on military influence have been Congressional efforts to structure the policy process and executive or statutory provisions restricting legislative military action of influence. These limitations have not resulted in the harmony, effectiveness, and efficiency initially expected. In fact, the combined efforts of Congress and the Administration have not approached in significance the self-imposed military restrictions founded in tradition and military intervention. This is not to imply that Congressional or national intervention was not necessary, but rather that these measures were symptoms of symptoms of a general situation.

A smooth and efficient organization is a definite asset to policy formulation and implementation. However, any organization is only as effective as the people who are responsible for its functioning. Therein rests one of the prime considerations to effective and reasonable limitations to military influence in the policy process. No degree of legal restriction is apt to limit military participation in areas which its leadership considers vital to the preservation of national security unless those areas have competent and vigorous civilian leadership. Approaching the subject from another direction, John J. McCloy substantiated the military's refusal to leave an inadequately covered policy area to chance:

Above all we must have officials in the State Department who have political vision and the ability to foresee and act upon vital world problems. They must have the capacity to develop long range programs for our security and that of the free world. Though they must have a full realization of the limitations which military and economic considerations impose, they must have courage, initiative and force in the political field They must be prepared to put forward creative proposals and they must not fold up at the first negative paper which emanates from the Pentagon, however formidable it is presented.³¹

Senator Jackson, a leading expert on national security organization, recognized the problem of "getting our

³¹John J. McCloy, The Challenge to American Foreign Policy (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1953), p. 51.

A smooth and efficient organization is a definite asset to policy formulation and implementation. However, any organization is only as effective as the people who are responsible for its functioning. Therein rests one of the prime considerations to effective and reasonable limitations to military influence in the policy process. No degree of legal restriction is apt to limit military participation in areas which the leadership considers vital to the preservation of national security unless those areas have coherent and vigorous civilian leadership. Approaching the subject from another direction, John G. Hecoy substantiated the military's refusal to leave an inadequately covered policy area to chance:

Above all we must have officials in the State Department who have political vision and the ability to foresee and act upon vital world problems. They must have the capacity to develop long range programs for our security and that of the free world. Though they must have a full realization of the limitations which military and economic considerations impose, they must have courage, initiative and force in the political field . . . They must be prepared to put forward creative proposals and they must not fold up at the first negative paper which emanates from the Pentagon, however formidable it is presented.

Senator Jackson, a leading expert on national security organization, recognized the problem of "getting our

²¹ John G. Hecoy, The Challenge to American Foreign Policy (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1951), p. 21.

best people into key foreign policy and defense posts" as the heart of national security.³² Yet, even though the lack of civilian leadership has been recognized and some improvements instituted, the general consensus remains that the government will never solve the problem until the many barriers to recruitment of superior talent are lowered.

Improvement in civilian leadership alone will not drastically limit military influence. The military leadership must exert a vigorous control over their hierarchies as well as exhibiting a willingness to take issue on a confidential basis with their civilian superiors. General Marshall's philosophy that the military leadership must set the example for their services by complete loyalty to the Administration's policy expresses the most effective type of influence limitation.³³ Complete acceptance of General Marshall's attitude would substantially reduce all but the most legitimate means of military influence. However, the

³²United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Organizing for National Security, Final Statement of Senator Henry M. Jackson, Chairman of its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 87th Cong., 1st Sess., November 15, 1961, Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961), p. 139.

³³United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Administration of National Security: Selected Papers, Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d Sess. (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1962), p. 139.

best people have any foreign policy and defense power as the heart of national security.¹⁵ Yet, even though the lack of civilian leadership has been recognized and remedied, the government will never solve the problem until the many aspects of recruitment of superior talent are changed. Improvements in civilian leadership alone will not drastically limit military influence. The military leadership must exert a vigorous control over their hierarchies as well as exhibiting a willingness to take issue on a confidential basis with their civilian superiors. General Marshall's philosophy that the military leadership must put the people for their service by complete loyalty to the Administration's policy expresses the most effective type of influence limitation.¹⁶ Complete acceptance of General Marshall's attitude would substantially reduce all but the most ineffective areas of military influence. However, the

¹⁵United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Investigation of National Security, Final Report of Senator Henry M. Jackson, Chairman of the Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 93rd Cong., 1st Sess., November 12, 1961, Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961), p. 139.

¹⁶United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations, Investigation of National Security, Final Report of Senator Henry M. Jackson, Chairman of the Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 93rd Cong., 1st Sess., November 12, 1961, Committee Print (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961), p. 139.

desirability of initiating such a system ultimately rests with its effect on national security, and that effect would undoubtedly be detrimental unless complementary factors of influence limitation are simultaneously initiated.

The most important supplement to a different military attitude must be a legitimate means of policy influence which can be divorced from partisan politics, political expediency, and bureaucratic controls. General Taylor's proposal for a separate and independent Supreme Military Council meets part of these requirements.³⁴ But further refinements would be necessary in order to insure that the remaining hierarchy was not subjected to Administration pressures in the form of legitimating policy or debating with the independent council. Since the council would have a role of policy review, recommendation, and advice, and would be comprised of officers totally divorced from their military services, they could legally and ethically support, oppose, or propose modifications to national security policy on the basis of military expertise alone. The problems associated with such a plan are numerous; but when coupled with a purely professionally-oriented military hierarchy, the potential benefits for national security are most attractive.

³⁴Maxwell D. Taylor, The Uncertain Trumpet (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1960), pp. 176-177.

possibility of initiating such a system militarily rests with its effect on national security, and that effect would undoubtedly be detrimental unless complementary factors of influence limitation are simultaneously initiated.

The most important supplement to a different military attitude such as a legislative means of policy initiation which can be divorced from partisan politics, political expediency, and bureaucratic controls. General Taylor's proposal for a separate and independent Supreme Military Council meets part of these requirements.¹⁴ But further refinements would be necessary in order to insure that the remaining hierarchy was not subjected to administration presented in the form of legislated policy or dealing with the independent council. Since the council would have a role of policy review, recommendation, and advice, and would be consisted of officers totally divorced from their military services, they could legally and ethically support, oppose, or propose modifications to national security policy on the basis of military expertise alone. The problem associated with such a plan are numerous; but when coupled with a purely professionally-oriented military hierarchy, the potential benefits for national security are most attractive.

¹⁴General Taylor, The Supreme Military Council (New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1961), pp. 174-177.

There has been a degree of correlation between influence means and limitations since World War II. The limitations which have been imposed have been generally proportional to the decrease in legitimate means through which the military voice could be heard. At the same time, the number of quasi-legitimate and illegitimate means of influence have increased as well as an increased utilization of various improper means. The most significant potential danger from the trend is that too many structural and legal influence limitations may force the military to become more involved in the political arena in order to contribute to the national security policy process.

CHAPTER VI

CONCLUSIONS

Any objective study of the military role in national security will reveal the ambiguous and paradoxical nature of military influence. The military group, perhaps more than any other participant in the security policy process, has gained the distinction of being "damned if they do, damned if they don't." Some critics of military influence argue that the military should concern itself with purely military matters; while others lament the fact that military decisions give insufficient attention to political aspects. Military policy makers find themselves simultaneously charged with being too aggressive and too cautious, poorly organized and highly organized, and possessing many other equally contradictory attributes.

The strangest part of the contradiction is that each charge and each criticism, regardless of sides taken, appear to have enough validity to sustain a reasonable argument. Therefore, the overall conclusion of this study is that national values regarding military influence are fragmented and ambiguous, and this condition leads to an indecisive determination of the degrees of military influence which society will tolerate. However, general parameters for military involvement are fairly well formulated by the

CONCLUSIONS

Any objective study of the military role in national security will reveal the ambiguous and perplexed nature of military influence. The military group, perhaps more than any other participant in the security policy process, has gained the distinction of being "damned if they do, damned if they don't." Some critics of military influence argue that the military should concern itself with purely military matters; while others insist the role of military decisions give insufficient attention to political aspects. Military policy makers find themselves simultaneously charged with being too aggressive and too cautious, poorly organized and highly organized, and possessing many other equally contradictory attributes.

The strongest part of the contradiction is that each group and each critic, regardless of what group, appear to have enough validity to sustain a reasonable argument. Therefore, the overall conclusion of this study is that national values regarding military influence are fragmented and ambiguous, and this condition leads to an indefinite determination of the degree of military influence which society will tolerate. However, general parameters for military involvement are fairly well formulated by the

broad concepts of democratic government and the requirements for military security. Since these primary limiting factors are not compatible and military influence is, in a sense, a relative quantity, different interpretations of the degree of military influence reflected in national policy become not only possible but entirely probable.

It becomes obvious from the study that the traditional civilian-military relationship has gradually evolved toward a better understanding; however, the condition of mutual trust has not been fully attained. Civilian leaders in the government no longer fear military usurpation of political power, but a certain degree of uneasiness is still exhibited over the so-called "military mind." At the same time, considerable evidence supports the conclusion that the military's antagonism toward the civilian leadership in the Office of the Department of Defense has increased during the period of that organization's ascendancy to firmer control over the military. The nature of national security policy formulation and implementation with its heavy reliance on cooperation and coordination indicates that the process would benefit by any improvement in relationships of the participants. Therefore, the concept of the military mind should be explored and reconstructed on the basis of fact rather than random interpretation, and a solution to the problems of civilian expertise versus

broad concepts of democratic government and the require-
 ments for military security. Since these primary limiting
 factors are not compatible and military influence is, in a
 sense, a relative quantity, different interpretations of
 the degree of military influence reflected in national
 policy become not only possible but actually probable.
 It becomes obvious from the study that the tradi-
 tional civilian-military relationship has gradually evolved
 toward a better understanding; however, the final stage of
 mutual trust has not been fully achieved. Civilian leaders
 in the government no longer fear military usurpation of
 political power, but a certain degree of uneasiness is
 still exhibited over the so-called "military mind." At the
 same time, considerable evidence supports the conclusion
 that the military's antagonism toward the civilian leader-
 ship of the Office of the Department of Defense has in-
 creased during the period of that organization's ascendancy
 to direct control over the military. The nature of national
 security policy formulation and implementation with its
 heavy reliance on cooperation and coordination indicates
 that the process would benefit by any improvement in the
 knowledge of the participants. Therefore, the concept of
 the military mind should be explored and considered as
 the basis of fact rather than random speculation, and a
 solution to the problem of civilian superior versus

military expertise in military matters should be determined within the Department of Defense.

The latter problem is only one of many relating to aspects of the National Security Organization. Past efforts at improving security through structure undoubtedly have aided the formulation and coordination of national policy; however, the relative ease with which the system can be circumscribed definitely indicates that organizational reforms are insufficient in themselves to insure proper balancing of participants' influence. This, in turn, leads to the recognition that role determination for all members of the security policy team must not only be enumerated but must also be adhered to in practice. Only through appropriate role determination can the military attitude be changed because it requires recognition and restraint on the part of non-military leaders as well as by the generals and admirals.

Conclusions concerning the degree of military involvement in national policy can only be described as extensive. As previously mentioned, judgment as to whether there is too much, too little, or the correct amount is a purely subjective exercise. Relatively speaking, one could conclude that military influence has increased drastically beyond that exerted prior to World War II or that the influence of the military today is significantly less than that

military expertise in military matters should be determined
 within the Department of Defense.
 The latter problem is only one of many related to
 aspects of the National Security Organization. Past efforts
 at improving security through structure undoubtedly have
 added the formulation and coordination of national policy;
 however, the relative ease with which the system can be
 circumvented definitely indicates that organizational re-
 form is insufficient in themselves to insure proper
 selection of participants' influence. This, in turn, leads
 to the recognition that role determination for all members
 of the security policy team must not only be enumerated but
 must also be adhered to in practice. Only through appro-
 priate role determination can the military achieve its
 purpose because its corporate conception and reaction on
 the part of non-military leaders as well as by the generals
 and admirals.
 Conclusions concerning the degree of military in-
 volvement in national policy can only be described as specu-
 lative. As previously mentioned, judgment as to whether
 there is too much, too little, or the correct amount is a
 purely subjective exercise. Relatively speaking, one would
 conclude that military influence has increased drastically
 beyond that accorded prior to World War II on the basis of the

held during World War II. However, it would appear that military influence has become somewhat imbalanced, tending to decrease in the area of strategic planning and capability analysis while proportionally increasing in the areas of politico-military affairs, policy representation and coordination, and social and economic impact.

It is impossible to determine the exact degree to which military influence has affected national policy since World War II. Although the economic costs of military expenditures during the same period are staggering to the mind's comprehension, one fact stands out: the nation's security interests, as embodied in the national policies of four successive Administrations, have been generally successful, and the influence exerted by the military leadership has contributed substantially to that success. National policy making is a complex and intricate process in which the influence of participants vary according to time and events; therefore, the degree of influence of particular groups must be considered in light of goals, objectives and results, and the evaluations should seek an overall perspective.

held during World War II. However, it would appear that military influence has become somewhat imbalanced, tending to increase in the area of strategic planning and capability analysis while proportionally decreasing in the areas of policy-military affairs, policy representation and coordination, and social and economic impact.

It is impossible to determine the exact degree to which military influence has affected national policy since World War II. Although the economic costs of military expenditures during the same period are staggering, the military's contribution, and fact against over the nation's security interests, as embodied in the national policies of four successive administrations, have been generally successful, and the influence exerted by the military leadership has contributed substantially to that success.

National policy making is a complex and intricate process in which the influence of participants vary according to time and circumstances. Therefore, the degree of influence of particular groups must be considered in light of goals, objectives and results, and the evaluation should seek an overall perspective.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. PRIMARY SOURCES

1. Collected Documents

Millis, Walter (ed.). The Forrestal Diaries. New York: The Viking Press, 1951.

Whan, Varin E., Jr. (ed.). A Soldier Speaks, Public Papers and Speeches of General of the Army, Douglas MacArthur. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1965.

2. Publications of the Government

Office of the Federal Register. United States Government Organization Manual 1966-67. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services. Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year 1962. Hearings, 87th Cong., 1st Sess., April 4-19, 1961. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961.

_____. Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year 1964. Hearing, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., on H.R. 2440 (S.843), February 19-March 8, 1963. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963.

_____. Mutual Security Act of 1952. Hearings, 82d Cong., 2d Sess., on S.3086, May 8-13, 1952. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1952.

_____. National Defense Establishment. Hearings, 80th Cong., 1st Sess., on S.758, March 18-May 9, 1947. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1947.

_____. National Security Act of 1947, as amended through September 20, 1966, Committee Print, 89th Cong., 2d Sess. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966.

_____. National Security Act Amendments of 1949. Hearings, 81st Cong., 1st Sess., on S.1843, March 24-May 6, 1949. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1949.

_____. National Security Training Corps Act. Hearings,

ETHNOGRAPHY

A. PRIMARY SOURCES

1. Collected Documents

Miller, Walter (ed.). The Fortunate Pilgrims. New York: The Viking Press, 1951.

Allen, Vera C., Jr. (ed.). A Soldier's Story: Public Letters and Speeches of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1953.

2. Publications of the Government

Office of the Federal Register. United States Government Organization Manual 1955-57. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1955.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services. Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year 1957. Hearing, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., April 2-13, 1957. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1957.

_____. Military Procurement Authorization, Fiscal Year 1958. Hearing, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., on May 14-15, 1957. February 19-March 8, 1957. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1957.

_____. National Security Act of 1955. Hearing, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., on 3-10-55, May 8-13, 1955. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1955.

_____. National Defense Reorganization. Hearing, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., on 3-15-55, March 13-May 3, 1957. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1957.

_____. National Security Act of 1947, as amended through September 30, 1955. Committee Print, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., Washington: Government Printing Office, 1956.

_____. National Security Act Amendments of 1953. Hearing, 85th Cong., 1st Sess., on 3-15-53, March 14-May 6, 1953. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1953.

_____. National Security Training Corps Act. Hearing,

82d Cong., 2d Sess., on S.2441, February 7-14, 1952.
Washington: Government Printing Office, 1952.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Committee on Appropriations. Military Procurement Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1967. Hearings, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., on S.2950, February 23-March 31, 1966. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government Operations. Administration of National Security. Hearing before its Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., June 25, 1964. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1964.

_____. Administration of National Security: Basic Issues. A study submitted by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963.

_____. Administration of National Security: Selected Papers. Prepared by its Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 87th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1962.

_____. The Ambassador and the Problem of Coordination: A Study. Submitted by the Subcommittee on National Security Staffing and Operations, 88th Cong., 1st Sess., Washington: Government Printing Office, 1963.

_____. The Atlantic Alliance. Hearings before its Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., May 5-6, 1966. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966.

_____. Organizing for National Security. Final Statement of Senator Henry M. Jackson, Chairman of its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 87th Cong., 1st Sess., November 15, 1961, Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1961.

_____. Organizing for National Security. Interim report by its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 86th Cong., 2d Sess. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960.

_____. Organizing for National Security: Selected

82d Cong., 2d sess., on 4-24-41, February 7-14, 1952.
Washington: Government Printing Office, 1952.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Armed Services
and Subcommittee on Department of Defense of the Com-
mittee on Appropriations. Military Procurement
Authorizations for Fiscal Year 1957. Hearings, 85th
Cong., 2d sess., on 2-19-50, February 23-March 31, 1956.
Washington: Government Printing Office, 1956.

United States Congress, Senate, Committee on Government
Operations. Administration of National Security
Hearings before the Subcommittee on National Security
Staffing and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d sess., June 27,
1956. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1956.

Administration of National Security: Basic Issues.
A study submitted by the Subcommittee on National
Security Staffing and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d sess.,
Government Printing Office, Washington: Government Printing
Office, 1956.

Administration of National Security: Selected
Issues. Prepared by the Subcommittee on National
Security Staffing and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d sess.,
Government Printing Office, Washington: Government Printing
Office, 1956.

The Ambassador and the Problem of Foreign Affairs.
A study submitted by the Subcommittee on National
Security Staffing and Operations, 85th Cong., 2d sess.,
Washington: Government Printing Office, 1956.

The Atlantic Alliance. Hearings before the Sub-
committee on National Security and International
Operations, 85th Cong., 2d sess., May 2-6, 1956.
Washington: Government Printing Office, 1956.

Organization for National Security: Final Report.
Sent to Senator Henry M. Jackson, Chairman of the Sub-
committee on National Policy Machinery, 85th Cong.,
2d sess., November 12, 1956. Washington: Government
Printing Office, 1956.

Organization for National Security: Interim Report.
Submitted to the Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery,
85th Cong., 2d sess., Washington: Government Printing
Office, 1956.

Organization for National Security: Selected

Materials. Prepared for the Committee on Government Operations and its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 86th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960.

_____. The Secretary of State and the Problem of Coordination: New Duties and Procedures of March 4, 1966. Prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 89th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1966.

United States Department of Defense, Office of the Controller. Real and Personal Property of the Department of Defense as of 30 June 1965. Report submitted to the President and Congress.

3. Unpublished Materials

Memorandum from the Office of Naval Personnel (PERS-C31a) dated 1 January 1967.

United States Department of Defense. "Civilian and Military Personnel--Office of the Department of Defense." Directorate for Statistical Services, OSD, 1 December 1966. Non-published working papers.

_____. Statement of Secretary of Defense Robert S. McNamara Before the Armed Services Committee on the Fiscal Year 1965-1969 Defense Program and 1965 Defense Budget. January 27, 1964. (Mimeographed.)

B. SECONDARY SOURCES

1. Books

The American Assembly. The Representation of the United States Abroad. New York: Columbia University, 1956.

Brodie, Bernard. Strategy in the Missile Age. Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1959.

Caraley, Demetrios. The Politics of Military Unification. New York: Columbia University Press, 1966.

Donovan, Robert J. Eisenhower, The Inside Story. New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1956.

Statistics. Prepared for the Committee on Government Operations and its Subcommittee on National Policy Machinery, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960.

The Secretary of State and the Director of Central Intelligence. See State and Central Intelligence prepared by the Subcommittee on National Security and International Operations, 88th Cong., 2d Sess., Committee Print. Washington: Government Printing Office, 1960.

United States Department of Defense, Office of the General Counsel. Real and Personal Property of the Government of the United States. Report submitted to the President and Congress.

3. Unpublished Materials

Memorandum from the Office of Naval Personnel (OPNS-CIA) dated 1 January 1967.

United States Department of Defense. Civilian and Military Personnel--Office of the Department of Defense. Disposition for Statistical Services, 88th, 1 December 1966. Non-published working papers.

Department of Secretary of Defense. Report of the Secretary of Defense on the National Defense Science and Engineering Committee. Final Report 1967-1968. Defense Science and Engineering. Washington, D.C., 1968. (Unpublished.)

4. Secondary Sources

1. Books

- The American Academy. The Administration of the United States Navy. New York: Columbia University Press, 1960.
- Brooks, Bernard. Strategy in the Atlantic. Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1959.
- Galley, Donald. The Politics of Military Modernization. New York: Columbia University Press, 1961.
- Govan, Robert J. Albuquerque: The Inside Story. New York: Harper and Row, 1960.

- Drummond, Roscoe and Gaston Goblentz. Duel at the Brink. Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1960.
- Finer, Samuel E. The Man on Horseback. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1962.
- Fulbright, J. William. Old Myths and New Realities. New York: Random House, 1964.
- Gavin, James M. War and Peace in the Space Age. New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1958.
- Hamilton, Alexander, James Madison, and John Jay. The Federalist. New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, Inc., 1948.
- Huntington, Samuel P. The Soldier and the State. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1957.
- Kaufman, William W. The McNamara Strategy. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1964.
- Lerche, Charles O. and Abdul A. Said. Concepts of World Politics. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1964.
- McClendon, R. Earl. Changes in Organization for National Defense, 1949-1953. Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama: Air University Documentary Research Study, 1956.
- McCloy, John J. The Challenge to American Foreign Policy. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1953.
- Nicholas, Jack D., George B. Pickett, and William O. Spears, Jr. The Joint and Combined Staff Officer's Manual. Harrisburg, Pennsylvania: The Stackpole Company, 1959.
- Raymond, Jack. Power at the Pentagon. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1964.
- Rovere, Richard H. and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr. The General and the President. New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1951.
- Sapin, Burton M. and Richard C. Snyder. The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy. Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954.
- Sapin, Burton, Richard C. Snyder, and H. W. Bruck. An

- Brown, Gordon and Gordon. Days of the Spring. Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1960.
- Finer, Samuel E. The Man on Horseback. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1962.
- Polk, J. William. Old Myth and New Realities. New York: Random House, 1962.
- Reynolds, James W. War and Peace in the Middle East. New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1956.
- Reynolds, Alexander, James Madison, and John Jay. The Federalist. New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, Inc., 1946.
- Washington, Samuel E. The Soldier and the State. Cambridge: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1971.
- Kautman, William E. The Mosaic Strategy. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1964.
- Leitch, Charles C. and Abdul A. Said. Concepts of World Politics. Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1964.
- McClendon, R. Earl. Changes in Organization for National Defense, 1949-1951. Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama: Air University Documentary Research Study, 1956.
- McClellan, John J. The Challenge to American Foreign Policy. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1951.
- Nichols, Jack D., George S. Yickoff, and William C. Spence. The Joint and Combined Staff Officer's Manual. Harrisburg, Pennsylvania: The Stackpole Company, 1959.
- Raymond, Jack. Power at the Pentagon. New York: Harper and Row Publishers, 1964.
- Govern, Arthur H. and Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr. The General and the President. New York: Farrar, Straus and Young, 1951.
- Sagin, Burton M. and Richard C. Snyder. The Role of the Military in American Foreign Policy. Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1954.
- Sagin, Burton, Richard C. Snyder, and W. W. Lewis. 60

Appropriate Role for the Military in American Foreign Policy-Making: A Research Note. Princeton University Organizational Behavioral Section, July, 1954.

Stanley, Timothy W. American Defense and National Security. Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1956.

Swomley, John M. The Military Establishment. Boston: Beacon Press, 1964.

Taylor, Maxwell D. The Uncertain Trumpet. New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1959.

2. Essays and Articles in Collections

Dexter, Lewis A. "Congressmen and the Making of Military Policy," Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis B. Bobrow. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1965, pp. 94-111.

Ginsburgh, Robert H. "The Challenge to Military Professionalism," Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis B. Bobrow. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1965, pp. 129-141.

Hitch, Charles J. "Planning-Programming-Budgeting System," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 212-217.

Huntington, Samuel P. "Power, Expertise and the Military Profession," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al., Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 183-192.

_____. "Strategic Programs and the Political Process," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 137-166.

Kintner, William R. "The Politicalization of Strategy," National Security. Edited by David M. Abshire. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publisher, 1963, pp. 379-397.

Lyons, Gene M. "The New Civil-Military Relations," Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis B. Bobrow. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1965, pp. 11-129.

Organizational Development for the military in American foreign policy-making. A research note. Wisconsin University, Organizational Development Section, July, 1954.

Stanley, Timothy A. American Defense and National Security. Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1952.

Swomley, John M. The Military Establishment. Boston: Beacon Press, 1952.

Taylor, Harold D. The Uncertain Frontier. New York: Harper and Brothers, Publishers, 1952.

2. Essays and Articles in Collections

Geoffrey, Lewis A. "Government and the Making of Military Policy." Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis A. Johnson. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1952, pp. 92-111.

Ginsburg, Robert H. "The Challenge to Military Protection." Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis A. Johnson. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1952, pp. 122-141.

Hick, Charles J. "Planning-Production-Logistics System." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posner. St. Louis: The John Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 217-219.

Washington, Samuel A. "Power, Persuasion and the Military Protection." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posner. St. Louis: The John Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 193-195.

_____. "Strategic Programs and the Political Process." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posner. St. Louis: The John Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 137-152.

Kinross, William H. "The Political Process of Strategy." National Security. Edited by David M. Austin. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Publishers, 1951, pp. 177-187.

Lyons, Louis H. "The New Civil-Military Relations." Components of Defense Policy. Edited by Davis A. Johnson. Chicago: Rand McNally and Company, 1952, pp. 11-29.

- Osgood, Robert E. "The American Approach to War," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 98-108.
- _____. "War and Policy," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 109-115.
- Posvar, Wesley W. "The Realm of Obscurity," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 218-234.
- Ransom, Harry H. "Department of Defense: Unity or Confederation," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 167-182.
- Rowen, Henry S. "Defense and the Economy," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 124-136.
- Washington Center of Foreign Policy Research. "Developments in Military Technology and their Impact on United States and Foreign Policy," American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Posvar et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1965, pp. 116-123.

3. Periodicals

- Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr. "Military Force: How Much and Where?," The Reporter, IX (August 4, 1953), 11-16.
- U.S. News and World Report, April 13, 1951.

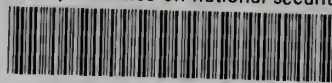
4. Newspapers

- New York Herald Tribune, May 1, 1947.
- The New York Times, October 20, 1945; February 3, 1955; May 16, 1962.
- The Washington Post, December 11, 1966; December 13, 1966; December 21, 1966; February 3, 1967; February 20, 1967.

- Capood, Robert E. "The American Approach to War." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 28-102.
- _____. "War and Policy." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 103-115.
- Foster, Wesley W. "The Crisis of Security." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 116-134.
- Ransom, Harry B. "Department of Defense: Unity or Conflict?" American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 135-182.
- Brown, Henry S. "Defense and the Economy." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 183-196.
- Washington Center of Foreign Policy Research. "Developments in Military Technology and Their Impact on United States and Foreign Policy." American Defense Policy. Edited by Wesley W. Foster et al. Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press, 1952, pp. 197-222.
3. Periodicals
- Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr. "Military Forces: How Much and Where?" The Reporter, 12 January 4, 1953, 11-16.
- U.S. News and World Report, April 13, 1951.
4. Newspapers
- New York Herald Tribune, May 1, 1947.
- The New York Times, October 10, 1945; February 3, 1952; May 18, 1953.
- The Washington Post, December 11, 1946; December 12, 1946; December 13, 1946; February 3, 1957; February 20, 1957.

thesl47

Military influence on national security



3 2768 002 10166 9

DUDLEY KNOX LIBRARY